# Love That Destroys

Author not credited

STORYPDF

Complete English text · US Letter reading edition

# Contents


Prologue 7

Chapter 1 The not so good start 9

Chapter 2 love interest 13

Chapter 3 suspicious 17

Chapter 4 dance competition 20

Chapter 5 first official meet 24

Chapter 6 visiting Temple 28

Chapter 7 punishment 32

Chapter 8 nightclub disaster 36

Chapter 9 after shock of disaster 41

Chapter 10 the most awaited proposal 45

Chapter 11 Superstitious or reality? 49

Chapter 12 real identity of Aashsank 53

Chapter 13 brother Dearest 56

Chapter 14 unexpected Danger 59

Chapter 15 saved and haunting memories 63

Chapter 16 time to return 67

Chapter 17 a shocking proposal 71

Chapter 18 Stuti's Marriage? 75

Chapter 19 beyond Surprise 78

Chapter 20 Finally fixed 82

Chapter 21 meeting Big Brother 86

Chapter 22 he knows everything 90

Chapter 23 finally Engaged 94

Chapter 24 boys also deserve it 98

Chapter 25 leaving House 102

Chapter 26 new home 106

Chapter 27 Birthday Surprise 110

Chapter 28 the Unfortunate kiss 115

Chapter 29 over possessive 120

Chapter 30 meeting Stuti 124

Chapter 31 argument and apology 128

Chapter 32 the ball 133

Chapter 33 fighting and getting drunk 138

Chapter 34 The kiss 142

Chapter 35 the wedding begins 146

Chapter 36 Mrs stuti Suryash Mehra 150

Chapter 37 shattered soul 155

Chapter 38 Stuti's Reception 160

Chapter 39 unexpected Turns Of Events 164

Chapter 40 she is dead 169

Chapter 41 in the cage of the devil 174

Chapter 42 the Failed Escape 179

Chapter 43 His pov part 1 184

Chapter 44 his pov part 2 189

Chapter 45 his pov part 3 194

Chapter 46 his pov part 4 199

Chapter 47 his pov part 5 205

Chapter 48 his pov part 6 210

Chapter 49 lost Hopes 215

Chapter 50 the Disastrous Wedding 219

Chapter 51 the tale of past 223

Chapter 52 torture begins 1 227

Chapter 53 torture Begins 2 232

Chapter 54 Dead soul 236

Chapter 55 silence before the storm 239

Chapter 56 the storm 243

Chapter 57 submitting to the devil 246

Chapter 58 snatched Virginity 250

Chapter 59 humiliation 254

Chapter 60 more trouble 258

Chapter 61 something unexpected 261

Chapter 62 Aashank is back 265

Chapter 63 punishment of foolishness 269

Chapter 64 betrayal 273

Chapter 65 his side 277

Chapter 66 caught you 281

Chapter 67 end of an innocent soul 285

Chapter 68 confessions 289

Chapter 69 she is pregnant 292

Chapter 70 changed 296

Chapter 71 lost 300

Chapter 72 blame game 304

Chapter 73 realisation 307

Chapter 74 changed her 310

Chapter 75 end or a new beginning 314

# About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: StoryPDF / Love That Destroys.

Reading edition: 2026-10-28. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

# Prologue

I am running in the massive woods to save my life from that psycho. It's night time and the darkness is making it impossible for me to watch anything around my surroundings. I don't know where I'm going or where I will go or how I will reach my family but I know only that.

He is behind me and I know if I let him catch me he will kill me for sure.

My feets are bleeding because I'm bare feet. My dress is torn courtesy goes to that psychotic bastard.

My whole body is covered with bruises and cuts and obviously those ugly hickeys.

"catch her if I didn't find her you all are as good as dead," I heard him screaming

Oh no he is coming for me. What should I do?

How did he get to know that I tried to run away?

I don't have time to think over it but i have to run but it's like fate isn't on my side. It was never from the day that a psychotic monster entered my life in the disguise of an angel.

I tripped on a tree trunk and fell on the ground hitting my head hard.

I'm sure it's bleeding as I can feel the blood trailing down from my forehead to my cheek.

And my ankle is twisted as well I can't run anymore I have to hide.

I tried to get up as I heard their footsteps.

I hide my body behind a massive tree. I don't care if it has poisonous insects or snakes. I will be happy if they bite me and end my pathetic life.

I hugged myself tightly as I felt them approaching me..

Oh god please save me this time he will kill me or worse break my legs because of my attempt.

"butterfly where are you?" he asked in a sing sang voice that made me gulp hard

Whenever he seems happy when I disobey him it's become worse than a nightmare for me. He is better angry than not happy.

"Butterfly, you know that I don't like to play hide and seek, right? Because i always catch my victims easily. Such a boring game. Will you come out on your own or you want me to drag you out? Believe me if you come out I may think to not hurt you much but if I dragged you then you

will be praying to God that you can walk again on those long legs. I like them wrapped around me when I make love to you but I won't mind to cut them off so you won't try anything like this again."He said in his cherry voice

Oh god please don't let him find me he is serious about it. He will do it.

I hold my breath so he won't be able to hear it and catch me. I can't take risks anymore, he can do anything.

" Tsk tsk butterfly I call you a butterfly that doesn't mean that you will fly here and there.. I give you chance a fucking chance to save you from punishment but you have to lose that as well now don't fucking blame me for what happens next.." He screamed the last part in pure anger

I guess today I will die like the way he wants..

I closed my eyes in anticipation of his next action but silence is the only thing that greeted me.

He is playing with me. He knows I'm here. He was trying to play.

Everything has become silent, no sound can be heard.

I couldn't hold my breath. I'm inhaling very slowly.

This silence is the silence before the storm. The storm that will end my life.

"Gotcha butterfly, what did you think that I won't be able to get you?" he said suddenly coming in front of me making me scream hard

# Chapter 1 The not so good start

Author's pov

*A girl is running in a dark forest where an ounce of light can't be found. The night is moonless making it more dreading.*

*"run baby, run as much you want but at the end you have come to me," the girl heard a manly voice but she didn't stop*

*She ran until she couldn't anymore. She fell down on the muddy ground with a thud and saw a person Standing in front of her.*

*She was about to look at the person when suddenly someone screamed.*

*" Turvi! Get your lazy ass up now,"*

**Turvi's pov**

I woke up from my nightmare and looked around myself. I'm here in my room on my bed.

And my annoying as fuck cousin cum best friend Stuti is screaming on my head.

I don't know why I always see this nightmare only. Same thing just situation and place changes.

"Turvi devi ap kripaya kar apna bistar par Aur mujhpe kripa kare Aur uthe (Turvi Devi, please do me and your bed a favour and get up)," she again said in her sarcastic voice

"Turu are you OK?" she asked me finally when she saw I'm not giving her any response

"I again saw it." I said and she understands what I'm talking about

"I'm here Turu," she said and hugged me tightly

"I know what time it is?" I asked her

"8 am doll face, and we will be doomed if we didn't reach college on time." she said and I glared at her

"don't fucking call me that. Understand?" I said

"ohk angry young woman i won't it's only for him now go and get ready I have made poha for us." she said and I nodded with a little blush on my face

I got up and went inside the washroom. I looked at the mirror and gasped looking at my eyes. It's bloodshot red like I was crying for hours.

Maybe I was in my dreams, who knows.

I decided to not wash my hair as I'm running late today.

After my quick shower I wrapped my bathrobe around me and came out.

I looked at the cupboard and chose a white off shoulder sundress with a band on the stomach.

I changed in it and it ended on my mid thighs. I tied my hair in a high ponytail and wore earrings. And tada I'm ready. I don't wear any makeup except kajal and lip gloss why? Because I'm naturally beautiful. Not bragging about it but telling the truth.

But kajal to enhance my big eyes and lip gloss to make my natural pink lips look more attractive.

Once done I went out and saw my sister had served us well.

On that note we don't stay with our parents as we are studying in another city.

This small apartment is my maternal aunt's. So basically it's Stuti's.

My aunt and uncle died long ago when Stuti was 5 and I was 5 and half..

From that time Stuti has been staying with us. She is my best friend and sister. More than a cousin. She is annoying but I love her.

"wow it's smelling so good." I said her and she smiled

She has a passion for cooking like I have for dancing.

Oh shit sorry I forgot to tell you about me.

I'm Turvi Ahuja, only daughter of Dr. Suraj Ahuja and Mrs. Minakshi Ahuja.

Yes my dad is a doctor.. We belong to the upper middle class. We have enough not too much neither too less.

I have a passion for dance. I learned 3 kinds of dance, belly dance, Bharatanatyam and bollywood and I can dance to any song in any form. I just need to watch the video and practice for a while.

So I think you know me now and other things you will know later.

I ate the poha with a satisfying feeling as my sisy can make a simple and plain poha turn into something special.

Once done we both left for our college.

We have to take an auto rickshaw as we aren't allowed to drive. We are 22 for god sake but no for our parents we are 2.

"I told you to get ready fast, see now we will be late and Mittal sir will not allow us in his class." Stuti said while we are waiting for an auto rickshaw

I ignored her because I know if I said anything she will blame me more.

I was roaming my eyes here and there when I spotted an old man crossing the road and a car coming in speed.

Without thinking about anything I ran towards the old man and saved him as the car was far away and it stopped in front of me only.

"uncle ap thik to ho na? Chot to nahi lagi? (Uncle are you ok? You aren't injured right?)" I asked the uncle who shook his head no

"oh hello, andhe ho kya? Aankhen hai ya button? Dikhta nahi hai ki red signal hai. (Oh hello, are you blind? Are they your eyes or button? Can't you see it's red signal?)" I screamed at the driver of the car

Who the fuck he is? Breaking rules and playing with innocent lives.

A man in his mid thirties came outside. He is wearing all black clothes like those bodyguards shown In movies

"hey girl I'm not in fault this old hag is not watching where he was going " he said with attitude

Ek to chori upar se seena zori? (stealing itself is shameful add blatant indifference on top of it, this is outrageous)

It's taken from google I don't know if it is correct or not.

"and how you're not at fault? You broke traffic rules." I argued and felt Stuti coming behind me

"are you OK Turvi?" she asked

"I'm fine," I replied her

"listen don't make it a big issue and move aside." that man said

Arrogant jerk! If a driver is like this only God knows what kind of boss he has.

"Zubair gave her some money and closed the matter." someone said from the car

Who they think I'm? Giving money and all? Do I look like a beggar to them?

I'm not shocked that his driver is this arrogant because his boss is more.

I go towards the car and look at the tinted glass.

" listen here Mr. Richy rich I don't fucking need your money. Do I look like a beggar to you? This road isn't your dad's so you better mind that." I screamed at the man who is sitting in the car

"Turvi shut up and came back. We are getting late." Stuti screamed at me and I sighed

"if I wasn't getting late then I would have shown you what I'm for real. Bloody rich bastards." I cursed and left from there but not before making sure that uncle is safe and making him cross the road.

Stuti always said to me to not talk much because my sharp tongue will he the death of me one day

But little did I know that this thought will be true that my sharp tongue only invited the devil in my life..

# Chapter 2 love interest

Turvi's pov

Me and Stuti both are seated inside an auto rickshaw that is taking us to our college.

Stuti hasn't uttered a single word after that fight.

And I know why that is.. She doesn't like unnecessary drama and fights. She is the silent one in us.

"Stuti says something this year. Silence doesn't suit you baby doll." I said and saw the driver looking at me from the mirror

"The road is in front of you, not in the backside so concentration on that." I told him and he looked at the front only

"now please say something." I told her

"why did you curse that man?" she asked what I thought she will

"because that Richie rich deserves that. You saw what happened right?" I asked her

"Yes I did. But did you see his car? It was from an exclusive and expensive collection. He must be rich very much and his driver was also looking like men in black. What if he harms you? You have offended him by cursing." she said and I sighed

"that blind richie rich has more work to do doll, don't worry about him he can't do shit. And how will he find me? In this big city there are many people and I don't think he clearly saw me as well." I said and she shook her head

"I will tell this to Bua (paternal aunt) then she will handle you." she said and I gave her an are you out of your mind look.

Mom will kill me if she gets to know about this. She is too much orthodox. Despite being educated her thinking didn't change at all.

She doesn't like my dancing and wearing this kind of clothing. It's dad who supported me.

"tu behen hai ya dushman?"(are you sister or enemy?)I asked her

"your well wisher," she replied

"Please don't tell mom you know how she is, pretty please." I pleaded

"fine this time I will but not every time I will stop it's about your safety," she said and I smiled

We reached our college late thanks to that king of arrogance.

"first period is missed," Stuti said glaring at me

Did I mention she is a bookworm? Well I didn't. She is a very studious student but I'm not. I'm an average student. 90 percent is passed 40 percent also is passed. So why take tension?

"No worries , one class won't harm much." I told her and she glared at me but then her eyes roam behind me

"Turu, Shravan is coming," she said and I rolled my eyes

Shravan is one of those boys who are trying to date me. Almost every boy in my class is behind me. Almost but alas the one who should be Interested he shows no emotions like that. Girls are jealous of me because I get everyone's attention but they can burn in their jealousy. I don't give a damn.

"hi Turvi, hi Stuti," shravan said and I turned towards him

It's not that he isn't handsome , but my heart does not want him but someone else.

"hii shravan." I replied but Stuti kept silent

She doesn't respond to boys and even Girls sometimes. No one will say that the girl who bosses around in the house is a scared kitten outside.

"so want to say something?" I asked him because he was staring at me without blinking and that's creepy as fuck

"yeah actually I wanted to ask you something." He said nervously

I know what's coming after this but let's play along.

"go ahead I'm all ears," I told him

"will you go in the farewell party with me as my date?" he asked me and I took a deep breath

"I'm sorry. But I can't." I told him and his face fell but he tried to smile

"it's ok so with whom you're going?" he asked me

Now what should I answer? I'm not going with anyone yet.

"with me," a very familiar voice said making my heart skip a beat

"I should have thought that." shravan muttered under his breath but I heard him

"um Stuti will you like to go?" he asked her

Stuti looked at him in shock first, but that didn't last for long because her face became straight again.

"thank you for asking but I'm not a substitute or proxy. So no." she said without any emotions

And that was a cue for Shravan to be embarrassed.

The handsome hunk got rejected twice on his face. Such a pity. Tsk!

"Why don't you ask Trisha? I'm sure she will love to join you." I told him and he fake smiled

"I should go, bye" he said and left

I turn towards my hero and look at him with a fake angry face.

"well hello Mr. Raichand. And who said I'm coming with you? I didn't say yes if I remember, oh you didn't even ask me about it. You can't just go around and dec...."my words struck in my throat when he go down on his knees

Is he going to do what I'm thinking? Is he finally going to.. I should stop now and let him say what he wants to.

" so Ms. Turvi Ahuja will you do the honour of being my date to the farewell party? "he asked me and here my all high hopes got crushed again

" I will think about it, "I said

" that means a yes. See doll face I asked you and you accepted now you're my date for that day. "He said and unknown to me my cheeks reddened

He calls me doll face and I don't like if someone else calls me that.

And my devil sister teases me with that.

" I didn't said yes Aashank, you're being Delusional "I told him

" oh you said you will think and that means you will say yes because you can't deny a handsome man like me now can you? "he asked and I rolled my eyes

" handsome and you? You look like a monkey. "I retorted

" and you are friends with this monkey. "He said

Such a sly bastard he is..

" but you love this bastard, "says my heart

Yes ladies and gentlemen I love this idiot who is our friend as well. I am not sure about his feelings, that's why I never said anything to him. I have liked him since the first day we met.

He is also from a middle class background. He doesn't have parents. They died when he was young and he had an elder brother whom we never saw.

He is a musician and singer what a perfect couple we will be isn't it?

"Doll face back to earth," he said and snapped his fingers in front of me

"yeah, you're too irritating." I said

"Well doll face you have to go with this irritating man now as your dance teacher asked me to call you and take her. She has some news for you." Aashank said

"what news?" I asked

"I don't know, let's go if you want to know." He said and I nodded

I turn to find Stuti but she is not here.

"where is Stuti?" I asked him

"she left when you're busy in day dreaming as she was getting late for her classes," he said and I nodded

"Let's go then," he said

"yeah," I replied to him

Little did I know that this news was bad news in the form of a good one.

# Chapter 3 suspicious

Turvi's pov

Me and Aashank both are walking towards the dance room where our teacher is found basically.

I am looking at him like that idiot is doing god knows what in this damn phone.

"Aashu if you don't want me to throw that phone of yours in dustbin then fucking place it inside your pocket." I hissed

"calm down doll face, don't be so hyper. And yes don't curse in front of me you know I don't like cursing." He said seriously

"and I don't like when someone ignore me," I told him back

"Bhai is texting me, he is here and wants to meet me." He said with a smile on his face

He looks so cute when he smiles..

"oh your brother, that's good you should meet him. By the way, why don't you introduce us to your brother?" I asked him and he looked nervous?

"Yes doll face I will one day when the time is correct." He said but I didn't understand what he meant by that.

Before I can ask anything we reach the dance room where Mrs. Disha is waiting for us.

Mrs. Disha is my current dance teacher inside and outside of college both.

" May we come in mam? "I asked

" Yes come, "she replied

" So Turvi and Aashank I have been notified that after 2 weeks there is a competition of dance and playing instruments held in our college. Every college in this city is participating here. The winner will get a chance to take training from a well known dance And music academy A&A Academy. "Mrs. Diksha said and I can't help but smile brightly

A&A academy is my dream academy but it's out of my league. But if I can win here then I will get a chance to take training from there.

" so I guess you both understand what I mean? You have to participate in this and I hope you both win because you both are best in what you do." Mrs. Disha said

"man that's a really great chance. Thank you so much for making us participate in this.." I told her

"mam I can't participate here I'm sorry. You can find someone else to participate." Aashank said and I turned my head in a jet speed towards him

"what do you mean by that?" Mrs. Disha asked what I'm thinking to

"I can't mam, I'm sorry but I have some work that I can't delay or cancel on that time span." Aashank said and left from there before I could even open my mouth.

What the bloody fuck? Why is he behaving like this?

"Turvi you're participating in the competition right?" Mrs. Disha asked

"Yes mam I will," I told her

"then start practicing because you will have tough competition." she said and I nodded

I left from there to find that king of morons.

What? Yes I love him but that doesn't mean I will support his bull shit behaviour.

I check time and it's time for 3rd class. Well fuck the class.

" hey where are you going? "I heard Stuti's voice

" not now Stuti I'm fucking pissed of right now on that King of morons. I need to find him. "I told her

" OK ok calm down. Did you get to know about the competition? "she asked me

" Yes I do and that moron also does. He fucking rejected the chance to participate. " I told her angrily

" oh that's why you're angry? Have you forgotten that his brother is here? And whenever he came Aashank started to do weird things. He is scared of his brother who hates music. "Stuti said and I realised she is right..

" yeah you're correct. You know I really want to see him that oh so brother and give him a peace of mind. "I said

" Yeah sure, now calm down and let's go to our next class. You already missed two. "Stuti said and literally dragged me for the next class

In the class I saw him seating on our usual seat. Normally I sat in between them but today I made Stuti sit in the middle.

I am still angry at him for rejecting the offer.

" doll face won't you talk to me?" he asked me and I glare at him

"OK got it you won't." He said and looked in front of him.

The class passed away with me not paying attention to a single word the professor said.

I took my things and got up from the seat.

"doll face, I'm going back to my house for 2 weeks. It's something important." He said

"is everything OK? Your brother came today and yours saying you have to go home." I asked him concerned

"don't worry nothing is wrong. Bhai is here for his office work and I'm going back for some other reasons." He explained

"He has some important work that's why he is going back to Turvi. Don't be tensed" Stuti said

"hmm won't you attend the competition? Not even to see me performing?" I asked him

"I will try to come back soon. Now bye I have to give me an application for leave as well." He says and hugged me and Stuti

"bye," we said as he left

I don't know why I'm not getting any good vibes from all this. I should be happy about this, right? But I'm not.

"turu don't worry baby. He will be fine but now you have to focus on your dance. You have to win so you can make your dream come true." Stuti said and I can't help but agree with her

I have to win this opportunity at any cost. Training from that academy can change my life completely.

" Yes you're right, "I said and she smiled

Days passed away in a hurry as the day of completion came.

I have practiced my performance many times and have combined three dance styles in one hope it will work for me.

Today the owner of A&A academy has come as he himself is going to select with judges.

I hope he will like my dance and choose me only.

# Chapter 4 dance competition

Turvi's pov

Turvi why aren't you ready yet?" Stuti asked me.

"I'm practicing for the last time. Once done I will finish my make up." I told her

I have worn my dress and jewellery just need to make up for it.

"No first get ready," she says

"Ok mummy," I mocked her and she rolled her eyes.

I finished my make up and saw myself in the mirror. I'm not looking bad I see. Lol whom I'm kidding I'm looking gorgeous...

I'm wearing a red blouse with gold thread work over it. And a net lehenga of cream colour with a red thread work cloth underneath it and a cream colour net dupatta with sparkling border on it.

And about my jewellery I'm wearing Rajasthani maang tikka, and pearl work jhumka and necklace set with the same pear work kamidahani on my waist. My wrists are adorned with red and golden colour bangles as a small black bindi is stuck between my eyebrows.....

"Stop praising yourself and practice till you have time," my oh so dear sister said.

"Yeah I know, by the way, did he come?" I asked about Aashank who just evaporated from our life's for a few days.

"Well sweety he hasn't come neither I think he will come," Stuti said and my face fell.

"Don't worry babe I'm here for you. And when Stuti is here, why do you need someone else near?" she asked and I laughed nodding my head.

I finally practiced my dance once again. It's a combination of 3 dance forms.

1. lavni

2. Bharatanatyam

3.katthak

I'm trained in Bharatanatyam but the other two are quite new but I adapt them well.

" The competition is about to start to come backstage." a girl from the crew informed me and I nodded my head.

"Let's go then," I told Stuti.

We came backstage and heard someone giving a speech.

"Who is giving a speech?" I asked about hearing the voice because it's unfamiliar and very much deep and husky.

The one that gives you shivers? Quite intimidating. No one in our college. Has this kind of voice.

"It's The owner of A&A academy," Arti replied.

"Oh," I said and concentrated on my performance.

Soon it started and girls from other colleges performed even as boys performed as well.

I'm last because my college is the one who is organising it.

"Turvi you are next." Arti said and I nodded.

"All the best Turu," Stuti said with a smile.

I took a deep breath and smiled. It's my turn now.

The stage was dark as I walked in. I have my face covered with the veil. I do it when I perform classical forms..

My opening is with Song aigiri Nandini with Bharatnatyam then Apsara Ali with Lavani dance style. In the middle, I did Kathak on Kahe ched mohe song.

The songs are switching in between and I'm changing my styles accordingly.

I know it's a very difficult thing to do but I did and I have to so I can win.

Once I finished I bowed down and left.

"Oh my god Turu you did an amazing job. It was better than the practice one." Stuti said hugging me

"It was meant to be better than that. I hope that I win." I told her

"Turvi you did a great job. I'm so proud of you" Mrs. Disha said patting my back.

"Thank you, mam," I told her.

Now we have to wait for the result to come out and that will happen after the music performance ends.

That idiot hasn't come back yet. Ane do vapas phir dekhungi mai usko. (Let him come, I will see him)

"You did very bad by not coming back today." I texted him.

And like every other time it got a single tick.

Where the fuck he is and what is he doing?

Suddenly my phone rang breaking my chain of thoughts. It's mom.

"Hi mom how are you doing?" I asked her.

"Hello Turu, I'm fine, how are you and Stuti? And what about your dance programme? " she asked me

"We both are fine mom and my dance performance went well," I told her but for some reason I felt her voice is strained and tensed? Or I'm thinking too much?

"You sure? Nothing happened right?" she asked.

"Mom we are fine. Can you tell me what happened? Why are you sounding tense?" I asked her.

Stuti also came back with some snacks to eat.

"Who is on the line?" she asked.

"Mom, wanna talk?" I asked her.

"Yup," she said.

"Turu two days back I had a bad dream about you and today again I saw it. My heart is not in peace, my sixth sense is telling that something is already wrong. Or going to happen please you both stay away from any drama or trouble. Don't act like a hero and fight with someone you know my sixth sense never says wrong. "She said and I remembered my encounter with Richie Rich 2 weeks ago.

Shut up Turvi don't remember that arrogant jerk...

" Ok mom don't worry about us we will stay out of trouble. "I told her.

" Mom Stuti wants to talk." I say and give the phone to Stuti.

Mom is never wrong in this matter but I didn't do anything wrong, did I?

"Well picking up unnecessary fights with strangers are wrong ." said my bitch of a subconscious.

I ignored her comment and noticed Stuti is talking with mom with a serious face.

Now, what happened to her?

She hung up sometime later and looked at me.

"Stay out of trouble," she said with a stern look

"Okay mummy now give food to your baby. She is starving." I said and she rolled her eyes.

She handed me my favourite noodles and that made me super happy...

She has taken a chicken wrap for herself.

We finished eating that and then ate what was assigned for participants.

Me and Stuti shared it...

While stuffing our stomach the time passed away and it's time for the results.

I'm very much nervous oh god please let it be me.

I heard the same voice from before saying something.

"All of the participants did a great job...." I ignored that part and was attentive when it's time to announce the winner's name.

Stuti had held my hand to support me.

"And the winner is Ms. Turvi Ahuja, congratulations," he said and I felt like I got the most important thing in my life.

"Congratulations Turu, you won," stuti said hugging Me and I hugged her back tightly

"Ms. Ahuja please come on the stage," I heard my name being called

I wiped my happy tears and walked towards the stage without knowing that I was stepping on a trap.

# Chapter 5 first official meet

Turvi's pov

I walked ahead and came in front of everyone.

Our principal is here with the owner of A&A academy Mr. Aaryav Raichand.

"I'm proud of you Turvi." our principal says with a smile

"I'm glad that i could make my college and teachers proud." I told him with a big smile of my own

"Now take the prize from him," he said and I looked at Mr Raichand.

Oh my goodness what he is?

He is so hot just like a greek god. His blue eyes with striking features... it's like god has crafted him taking his own good time.

He is looking like he has come straight from some photo shoot.

Don't give that look. I know I love Aashank but that doesn't mean that I can't praise or admire anyone.

And surprisingly they both look quite the same. If I look carefully they both will look brothers.

But I know it's impossible.

I heard someone clearing their throat and I saw it was our principal.

Crap! Am I caught checking him out?

"Yes baby you're," my subconscious replied

Oh fuck!

"congratulations Ms. Ahuja," Mr. Raichand said in his deep and husky voice

But wait why do I feel it has anger in his voice? Maybe he is angry because I was staring at him?

He doesn't like to be exposed in the media much. He likes his privacy very much.

"thank you sir," I said in my most sweet and polite way

"I hope you will use this chance to make your career and not waste it." He said and I nodded

Accidentally his fingers brushed mine when he was giving the prize to me and a jolt of electricity passed through my body. I visibly flinched back at that.

"thank you," saying again I left from there and took a deep breath

What the fuck was that?

"oh my goodness Turvi ye banda to bahut hot hai.(Turvi ,this guy is hot )" stuti said

"ha hai to sahi (Yes definitely)," I replied

"Why are your cheeks flushed madam?" she asked me

What? Am I really blushing?

I give Stuti the prize and go to the washroom.

I look at my face and yes I'm all red..

I washed my face multiple times to get rid of it.

Once I was normal I came out. My makeup is also washed out.

" are you OK?" stuti asked concerned about me

"Yes I let me get changed then we will leave. I'm tired.." I told her and she nodded in understanding

I changed into a simple red quarter sleeves top with a mini golden skirt of floral work over it.

Once done I came out of the changing room.

Stuti is also ready with our things.

" ready to go? "she asked and I nodded

We left the college but not before getting a lot of congratulations from others.

My legs are aching badly because of all the over practice I did.

" Stuti babe please book a cab or something I have no energy left. "I whined

" Just walk a little more, we will get something eventually. "stuti said

Ahh! How can I forget my dear sis doesn't like to waste money.

It will take 30 rupees if we use an auto rickshaw but 100 rupees if we take a cab.

" Fine, " I said and dragged my body.

Suddenly it started to rain and it's like all my tiredness vanished.

I love rain mostly dance in rain. The place doesn't matter neither I give a fuck to what others thinks.

Stuti ran towards a shelter but I stood in my place.

" Turu no, "stuti said but I'm not gonna listen

I stood in the rain and my legs moved automatically. It's like I can't control them.

And to my luck the alley is empty unlike other times.

I was dancing in the rain like a peacock. My whole body is drenched but it's ok.

Thank god I'm wearing red so it won't be a big problem for me.

"Turu come on yaar." stuti screamed

But I didn't reply.

I don't know why I felt someone's gaze on me. It's like someone is drilling holes in my body with their eyes.

I turn around to see if anyone is there or not but no one was there.

Then why am I feeling like this?

Am I becoming paranoid?

"Turvi it's enough you will fall sick like this don't forget our farewell is 4 Days later." stuti said and the bells rang in my mind

Fuck I forgot about that..

I stopped my dancing and ran towards Stuti who gave me a bored look.

She opens the umbrella and we walk till the main road.

We took an auto rickshaw and went back to our apartment.

I ran inside my washroom and took a hot water shower so I won't catch a cold.

After taking shower I draped a towel around my body and another on my head.

Let's see what I can wear..

I look through my clothes and hear a white printed t-shirt with shorts and wear them.

I started to dry my hair when Stuti came with herbal soup.

"drink it otherwise your sorry ass will fall sick and miss the chance to go with your dream man." she said smiling sweetly

"thanks babe without you what would happen to me," I told her and she smirked only

"By the way did you see the way Mr. Raichand was glaring at you? It's like you killed his cat or something." Stuti said what I was thinking

"yeah I saw that. Maybe he is angry because I was shamelessly checking him out?" I said

"possible he doesn't like to be in women presence tabloids say he is Gay." stuti said

"don't believe tabloids, they only talk shit. And if he is gay then man it's such a waste of his devilish looks and killer body. I'm sure girls would kill each other to be with him." I told her

"yeah that's true he is handsome very much. Who thought that the owner of this prestigious company would be so young and handsome. Normally its old people around 50 or 55" stuti said

"By the way how old is he?" I asked her

"34," stuti replied

"34 yet single with all those looks and everything. Interesting isn't it?" she asked when I didn't said anything

"maybe he hasn't found the one for him yet? Who knows. We should not judge." I told her

"true, now drink it and gather energy to beat your lover boy. He ditched you today." stuti said and I nodded..

# Chapter 6 visiting Temple

Turvi's pov

I got up from my sleep because again I saw the same thing and to my horror this time I could hear his voice clearly. Normally I just understand the words and don't understand anything but today it was different. God, I will get mad like this.

"Turvi! Oh great, you're awake. Get ready babe we have to leave." Stuti said.

Leave? At 6 am? Has she lost her mind completely?

"Our college won't start before 9 am so what's the rush?" I asked her to yawn.

"What day is today?" she asked me.

What day is today? I took my phone and saw the day. Oh, crap today is Thursday we have to go to the temple.

It's our daily routine. We always go to the temple on Thursday. Even back at home as well.

Home I miss it and my parents as well. I will be able to meet them soon. That's a relief.

But then I won't be able to meet Aashank anymore. He will also leave for his home.

Why is life so complicated?

"Back to earth princess, what are you thinking?" she asked me.

"Nothing, I will be ready to go," I told her but by her face, I can see that she didn't buy my crap.

"Ok," saying she left

I took a deep breath and got up from the bed.

I took my time in the washroom and washed my hair and body thoroughly. Once done I wrapped a towel around my body and hair.

I will wear something traditional today as I wear it in the temple.

Not because I care about what others will think if I wear western clothes in a temple, not at all.

It's because I love to wear them once a week or so.

I took out my dress that has a white sleeveless Kurti with pink rose printed over it and paired it with green churidar salwar with a plain white net dupatta.

I wore it and left my hair open to air dry them.

I wore kajal and lip gloss with a small bindi. And I'm ready to go.

I took my books because we will go to college directly from the temple.

It's 7:30 am now.. wow I took long enough to get ready.

"So your highness is ready huh?" stuti taunted

She is wearing a Red marwari frock suit with red straight pant along with with marwadi dupatta of red thin border

Well, she wears a salwar suit only sometimes jeans, not any other short clothing.

She is the typical kind of girl that orthodox people prefer.

"Yeah, I took a long time, sorry for that," I said and she shook her head.

We both go to the temple by walking. Save money and stay fit. Stuti's mantra.

This girl uff!

We reached the temple and saw its quite empty as its early morning not many people are here.

" Namaste pandit ji," we greeted the priest in the temple.

" Namaste beta ap kaisa ho (How are you child)? "he asked us.

He is a very sweet person... He always replies with a smile to others and has dedicated his life to this temple only.

" Hum thik hai, ap thik hai na ? (We are fine...are you fine?) "I asked him.

" Ji beta, Devi ma ki kripa se, (Yes child...as God has blessed me )" he said and we gave him the prasad we bought for puja.

No cookie points to guess who made it. It's our Chef Stuti Sharma.

I can't cook this much. I only know survival food. Fancy food isn't my cup of tea.

She has made besan ke laddu today yummy! I love coming to temples for another reason as well. After puja I get yummy prasad to eat.

(Laddu is a sphere-shaped sweet originating from the Indian subcontinent; the name originated from the Sanskrit word Lattika. Laddus are primarily made from flour, fat (ghee/butter/oil) and sugar. Laddus are often made of gram flour but can also be made with semolina or chickpea flour.

Sometimes ingredients such as chopped nuts and/or dried raisins are also added. The type of ingredients used may vary by recipe.)

Once done pandit ji put tilak on our forehead and blessed us.

It's 8:30 am now. Our college is 10 minutes walk from here again walking. Ugh!

Once Stuti got the prasad I forward my hand.

She smiled and gave me two laddo and packed a few in another container.

I eat my ladoo with a smile. I can eat it anytime.

We distributed the prasad to beggars who are sitting outside of the temple and they blessed us.

Now time to go to college...

We reach college on time and in the middle we stop to grab some coffee with a sandwich from a cafe.

It's near our college so it's not a problem.

We both enter and find most of the students inside their classes.

Stuti has a different class from me so she left and here I'm alone.

I was walking towards my class when I saw a boy from my year with a junior.

He has pinned her to the wall and the girl is crying.

What the fuck? I walked towards them and the girl saw me with hope in her eyes.

"What are you doing, leave her," I told him.

"Turvi, you go from here. Don't interfere in our matter." He said

"Is she your girlfriend? Even if she is you can't do this to her." I hissed.

"I'm not his girlfriend please save me he Is ragging me." the girl said sobbing.

"Leave her alone," I told him calmly.

"I won't, she is a junior and quite beautiful so I want her to be my girlfriend." He said and I lost my patience.

I fisted my hand and punched him in the stomach. I know it was hard because my hand is painful.

He left the girl who came behind me.

"I told you to leave her but you didn't listen now go back to your fucking class otherwise I will drag you to the principal room." I warmed him and he left but not before glaring at us.

"Thanks, di for saving me." the girl said.

"Why is he behind you?" I asked her though he told me.

"Actually on my first day, I bumped into him and spilled juice on him. I apologized to him and he accepted my apology but he started his illogical demands like staying away from boys and all. And now he wants me to be his girlfriend and I denied him that's why he was forcing me. And by the way, I'm Saima " Saima replied.

" Don't worry about him, Saima.I will handle him if he does anything again. You just tell me Ok. "I told her.

" You're Turvi Ahuja right? "she asked me and I nodded.

" Yes, I'm why? "I asked her

" Because I have heard about you saving juniors from seniors. And you won the dance competition as well. "Saima said.

" Oh, "I said

" Ok di I'm going to my class you also go. "Saima said and left but not before I gave her my contact number.

I sighed and walked towards my class. What a start to college in the morning.It was just great.

# Chapter 7 punishment

Turvi's pov

I walk towards my class and thankfully the professor hasn't come yet. So I won't get scolded for coming late.

I looked at my usual seat and found that idiot sitting down there and smiling at me like a fool.

I royally ignored him and walked past my seat and sat on an empty place.

Our classroom is huge so we got extra empty seats.

He frowned at me but I didn't give him a dam. I'm angry at him and he has to understand that.

He got up from his seat and sat beside me. I was about to get up but he held my hand.

"what happened doll face?" he asked me like he doesn't know

"um are you talking with me? Because my name Is Turvi, not some doll face. And moreover do I know you?" I asked him with an over sweet smile

He sighed understanding that I'm angry. Whenever I get angry I don't scream but ignore the people like they don't even exist in front me. And if I talk my tone will be sickly sweet.

" Doll face listen I'm Sorry," he said but I didn't look at him

My phone pinged with a message from our professor in the college whatsapp group.

He isn't coming to take the class. Great so mean I have time to be free as he has a double period.

Like me, others also got the message and they packed their things.

I haven't unpacked anything so I got up with my bag.

I was about to walk out When he held my dupatta from back to stop me.

"Aashank!" it was a warning for him

"I'm sorry," he said and left the dupatta but hold my hand

"doll face I know I promised you that I will be back but could not come. I just got struck there. And congratulations for winning. I'm really happy for you. Finally you can come to my city." He said in one go

"please forgive me.. I will accept your punishment" he said when I didn't replied

"any punishment?" I asked and he nodded

"hmm then take me and Stuti in wolf tonight," I said and he started to cough

What happened to him? I asked to take us to a club, not some 5 star hotel.

"wolf? Are you serious? That club is the worst among all."He said but why do I feel he is hiding something?

" that's your punishment. "I deadpan

" doll face I will take you in starlight or even in Ice and fire but not wolf."He looked determined

"may I know why?" I asked him

"That club isn't good, you know that. They do drugs and many things." He said and started to roam his hand on his hairs

He looked so hot while doing it. His messy hair..

OK I should stop now.

"either you're taking us to the wolf or forget your apology." I told him

"fuck Turvi, fine," he said taking my name

I don't remember him taking my name ever like ever. Only in front of teachers, not alone.

"OK that's good you're forgiven," I said and hugged him

I wish to spend the rest of my life in your arms only Aashank not any other man. Because I know my heart isn't capable of loving anyone else.

I sighed and broke the hug.

"Come on, let's go to the canteen." I said and dragged him there

We both sat and ordered some cold drinks with cheese sandwiches.

I texted stuti to come here as her next period is free one.

She came and looked at us with raised eyebrows. Silently asking about my good mood with him.

" Well guess what today Mr. Raichand is taking us to wolf." I told her and she looked surprised or I say shocked

"wolf? Have you lost your mind completely?" stuti asked as usual

"babe you need to chill out. Life is so short to waste a year. We get it only once because I don't believe in reincarnation shit. So we should enjoy it in full swing." I told her and both has same disapproval in their face

"you both are no fun," I said and heard Stuti snicker

"Your term of fun is dangerous, do you know that?" Aashank asked

"of course i do," I said with a wink

"anyway take this prasad." stuti said removing the container from her bag

Aashank forward his hand and she handed him two like me.

"whoa is it made by the great chef Stuti Sharma?" he asked and Stuti blushed a little

She isn't good with complements.

"Yes I made it because your dear doll face can't cook these things." she said with a smug look

He ate it and like always fed me one ladoo from him and ate another.

It's true she has magic in her hands.

We chatter a little then go to our next class that we all had together.

I sat in between them..

The day has passed and we are back home. I'm so excited to go to that club. I have heard a lot about it.

I want to see how dangerous it is.

I wore a white sleeveless tank top tucked in a silver pencil short skirt that reached till my mid thigh.

Well I'm looking hot I guess. I left my hair open and wore pink earrings and pink and silver heels.

I did my make up and I'm ready. I went out to find my dear sister wearing a Black strap top tucked under her high waist black jeans. She hasn't been ready completely.

Holy cow is she going to wear this?

"Stuti baby, we are going to a club so change." I told her

"Why change? I'm looking fine." she said

"Yes you're but I am not liking it. Please for today wear something I like, tomorrow I will wear something you like." I told her

"OK but not any revealing dress." she said and I nodded

I drag her in my room and give her a red off shoulder slim body tight dress that reaches her knees.

"Turu it's showing my cleavage and legs." she whined

"Baby it's the least revealing one in my collection. My whole dress ends on mid thigh you know that." I told her and she nodded

Good girl. Once she wore the dress I did her makeup and hair. With red heels and earrings her look is perfect.

"Oh my Stuti baby, you're looking smoking hot. Boys will be looking at you only today." I said with a wink and she blushed

My phone rang and it was Aashank he came to take us.

"come on girl Aashu is here," I told her and she nodded

# Chapter 8 nightclub disaster

Turvi's pov

I locked our apartment and walked downstairs with Stuti. She isn't comfortable with the dress much but she will be. She is looking so hot and gorgeous.

She always hides her beauty under those baggy clothes..

"babe calm down nothing will happen to you. No one will eat you alive. I won't leave you alone so don't worry." I told her and she smiled

"I know," is the only answer I got

We walked outside and saw a car waiting for us as the driver was Aashu.

Last time I checked he doesn't own a car but a bike.

Looking at us he came out of his car and let me tell you he is looking so handsome, hot and edible. Call me pervert but it's the way I'm.

"wow," he said looking at us or i say looking at Stuti

"wow doll face you made my nerd and boring sister hot and sexy not bad." He finished and I took a breath of relief when he used the word sister

I know it's absurd to be jealous of my sister but I can't help when it comes to him.

"oh hello, back to earth! What are you thinking?" Aashu snap his hand in front of me

"nothing.. We should go otherwise we will be late. And by the way who's car is it? " I asked him.

"it's my roommate Akshat's.. I borrowed from him." Aashu said and I nodded

Stuti sat in the back seat and I sat in the passenger seat in front with Aashu.

The ride is about 1 hour as the club is situated on the outskirts of the city.

I looked outside as it started to drizzle.. I wanted to go out and dance but alas I can't. I don't want to ruin my get up.

I leaned towards the window side and took a deep breath closing my eyes.

I opened my eyes and found myself in the middle of the forest

. What the fuck? How did I land here?

Where is Stuti and Aashu? Where is my phone?

"stuti! Aashu!" I screamed but no one replied

Where are they? And why are my clothes torn?

It's not what I wore before we left.

"if you both are pranking me then believe me it won't end well. I won't talk to you both.. Please come out." I screamed but I only got silence in return

This darkness of forest and creeping me out.

I need to leave from here.

I started to run when I suddenly heard someone's foot sounds behind me.

I didn't stop because it's not my friend or sister.

Suddenly I bumped into someone who held me from my waist. Its not Aashu

"ROSES ARE RED

VIOLETS ARE BLUE

YOU TRIED TO RUN AWAY

BUT I CAUGHT YOU"

the man said in a creepy way that my body was frozen.

I couldn't see anything, not even his face. Because now it's completely dark without any moonlit but I can clearly see one thing in his eyes.

They are very familiar to someone I know. Blue, his eyes are blue..

"Did you think you could escape me baby? If you do then you're very wrong." He said and came to kiss me but I screamed

"Noo!" I screamed and panted

"doll face are you OK?" Aashu asked me supping the car

I am in the car and with my friend and sister.

"Turu, did you see that again?" stuti asked and I nodded

"here take water." Aashu offered and I drink it

I'm drenched in sweat.. What the fuck was that?

Who is that man? And the first time I saw something about that man. His voice is very distant. I don't remember much.

"doll face do you want to go there or go home back?" Aashu asked me

"I want to go, I need to loosen up a little bit." I told him

"are you sure Turu?" stuti asked

"I'm, don't worry. I just want to sit with you." I said

"Yes come." she replied and open the door

I opened my side door and got down and hopped back in the back seat.

I hugged Stuti tightly because she is the one who can calm me.

We reached the club in 10 minutes and entered inside.

I can feel stares on me and stuti but I ignored it. I'm habitual of it but Stuti isn't enjoying it much. She wants to hide from everyone's eyes.

"I'm here," I told her holding her hand

"you both won't go anywhere alone. Always stay with me and go with me. And I fucking dare you to disobey me this time." He said with all seriousness

"OK boss we won't go anywhere." I told him

We go towards the bar area and order drinks.

I ordered a virgin mojito where Aashu decided to go with lemonade and so is Stuti.

"guys you can drink you know." I told them

"I'm not going to touch alcohol here. Nope I need to be in my senses and Stuti doesn't drink alcohol did you forget?" Aashu asked me

"Well everything has its first time Right?" I asked but she shook her head

"Fine suit yourself." saying I gulped my drink

I ordered four more drinks and gulped them down one by one in one breath when stuti and Aashu were talking about something.

"Turvi what are you doing? Have you lost your mind? You're drinking for the first time, don't forget." Aashu said but I care less

I want to be drunk and forget those things I saw. I know I will have a bad hangover but I care less about it.

"stop it Turu," stuti said

"last one I promise I will stop." I slurred

Guess I'm already drunk.

"fuck she is drunk already." Aashu cursed

"I wanna dance," saying I went to the dance floor and started to dance like a mad girl.

I was dancing forgetting everything on the song Psycho saiyaan.

I felt someone's hand on my back. It's Ashu I know.

"doll face we need to go back you're already drunk." He whisper and I giggled

"I want to stay.." I said and turn towards him

He is looking so handsome..

"Where is Stuti? bring her here. I want to dance with her." I pouted and started to cry

"OK I will bring her, you just stay here OK." He said and I laughed

He left me and I felt the urge to pee. I need to go.

I followed the signs for the washroom with difficulty as I'm stumbling here and there.

I guess I drank a lot but who cares.

I went inside the washroom and did my business but why is it different?

I went out and saw no girl here. It was strange!

I washed my hand and decided to go outside but I bumped with someone.

And he held me..

"Hey, what are you doing in the ladies washroom?" I slurred I could not see anything clearly

He mumbled something that I didn't understand.

"you're in the gents washroom." He said and I widen my eyes

Oh shit!

I suddenly felt the urge to throw up and I did. Black dots started to appear in front of me when I saw something that I don't want too but I saw clearly.

Same blue eyes from my nightmares…

# Chapter 9 after shock of disaster

Turvi's pov

Ahh! My head is aching so fucking much. My eyes are closed tightly like it's glued together. I am trying to open them but it's not working.

Why god why?

After trying a lot I opened my eyes but again closed them as the light blinded me for some time.

I opened my eyes slowly adjusting with the lights and saw Aashu and Stuti kissing each other madly, forgetting their surroundings.

Lol I'm joking it's nothing like that.

Stuti is sleeping beside me and Aashu on the couch in my room.

What happened? Why are they here in my room? And what happens to me? Why is it hurting so much?

"stuti," I called her and cringe at my own voice

Stuti woke up immediately. She is a light sleeper.

"Turu thank god tune apni akhein kholi. Tu thik to hai na? Kuch chahie?(You opened your eyes. Are you okay? Do you want anything?)

" she asked in one breath

"pani," (Water) I said and she nodded

She made me drink water and Aashu also got up from his sleep.

"doll face are you ok?" he asked me

"I'm fine," I told them

"take this medicine," stuti said and I ate it

Why are they so tense? What happened to me?

"guys why are you both so tense? What happened? And what are you doing in our apartment?" I asked them

"don't you remember anything that happened?" stuti asked

What happened? I tried to remember but I only saw those eyes that haunt me.

Concentrate Turvi don't think that things

We went to the wolf then I drank a lot then I was in the washroom and I was in the men's washroom. I even puked on someone. And fainted and I saw those eyes.

Holy fuck! Did I meet that mystery man?

"we found you inside of the ladies washroom, you have puked as your clothes were ruined." stuti says

wait, how can they find me from the ladies washroom? I was in the gents washroom I remember.

"But how can you find me ? I was in the gents washroom and someone was there who saved me from landing on my butt ." I told them and they give me unbelievable looks

"looks like the drug has affected her brain hard enough to hallucinate." Aashu said and I looked at him in horror

What does he mean by drug?

"what the fuck does that mean? What drugs?" I asked him

"yesterday they drugged not only you but many girls who took cocktails. They were trying some new drugs. I fucking hate that club because of this only but you don't listen to me." He said angrily and he has the right to be angry

He told me to not go there but I didn't listen to him and landed here. But was it really my hallucination? Maybe yes because I was disturbed with those eyes so only that came in front of me.

" I'm sorry, I should not have done that. Promise I won't ever step inside that club I promise." I told him with my puppy dog eyes and I know it will work and it did like every time

"OK ok no need to do drama. You take rest and I will leave now. Today we all missed college and don't forget tomorrow is the party we are going to together." He reminded me

"oh yeah. Yup we will go together by the way Stuti with whom you're going?" I asked her

"with" giving a pregnant pause she said "no one."

And hers goes the fun.

"It's our last year babe." I said and felt a little stinging on my head.

Well the pain is still here that I totally forgot.

"I don't like to go with anyone in the end, all try to do things and I'm not interested in that." she said I look at Aashu who look offended

"well not everyone does." I told her indicating with my eyes towards Aashu and she understands

"Yes not everyone is like our Aashu. But my bad he asks you not me." she said and Aashu's face became normal

"Now what can I say I'm only one piece here and that's already booked for his whole life." He said but I could not hear the last part as he muttered under his breath

"yeah I know that. Now let me make something to eat as we all are hungry." stuti said and in cue my stomach grumbled making me embarrassed

"see her stomach is approving." Aashu said and I flushed in embarrassment

"now you both get out I have to take shower I'm stinking" I said and they laughed at me

"get out!" I said and they left

I got up from the bed and looked at my hand. I had my bracelet on that I wore. But it has a few strands missing.

My favourite butterfly bracelet is now damaged but how did it break?

Ahh! That plan is a total disaster. I went inside my washroom and took

a long shower.

To get rid of the awful smell. After showering I wore an orange t-shirt and made a knot at the end with orange shorts.

But then I changed because I remember that Aashu is here and I can't wear it

so I wore a simple white one piece sleeveless dress with red roses printed over it. It reached my mid thighs.

Now I'm looking nice and appropriate.

I left my hair to air dry.. I put my bracelet in my jewellery box and went out.

Aashu and Stuti both are seated on the 4 seater dining table we have.

They are waiting for me, I know.

"come doll face eat something" Aashu said with care

Aww he cares about me if he only does more than care.

I sighed and kept my eyes on the real food only.

But again my mind took me in last night's incident where I saw that blue eyed man.

Was it really hallucinations? But it felt so real..

"Aashu, do you know the owner or A&A academy look like you?" stuti said and Aashu started to cough

Now what happened to him?

"here take water, eat slowly no one is snatching your food" I told him and Stuti pat his back

"it must be a coincidence that he looks like me." He said and I raised my brow

"I'm OK let's eat." He said and we nodded

Why did I feel he was hiding something?

# Chapter 10 the most awaited proposal

Turvi's pov

Finally today is the farewell party for what I've been waiting for so long. But with this I remember that we have a few days left here then we have to go back home.

It's not that I don't like to be with my family but the thing is I will miss everything here especially Aashu.

"madam in whose dreams are you lost?" stuti asked me

"no one's. I'm thinking about what to wear." I told her

"I have a perfect dress for you. Come with me." she said and dragged me with her

"What dress do you have Stuti?" I asked her as she doesn't wear shirt dresses

"remember our deal? I wore that red dress now you will wear what I give you." she said and I look at her in horror

God please don't tell me she is going to give me a saree or something.

"here it is.." she said giving me a saree

Fuck! I knew it..

"Stuti baby, I will wear it tomorrow, not tonight. I can't wear it to the party." I told her..

"a deal is a deal Turu and I'm also wearing a saree only." she said pointing towards her bed

And indeed there is a saree placed.

"babe I don't know how to drape it." I said

"I will drape it for you. But you will wear it only. Saree isn't a boring dress Turu. It's the sexiest dress ever you will see." she said and I nodded

God save me today..

"now go and wear the blouse and underskirt." she said giving me the things

I went to her washroom and changed my clothes.

After I came she made me stand still. And started to drape the saree around me.

Wow she is a perfectionist in a draping saree.

In 5 minutes she is done and I look at myself. I'm looking different but beautiful.

"so how's it?" she asked me with a mischievous smile

"it's ok." I told her

"only ok?" she asked

"OK fine I'm looking gorgeous." I admitted

"that's the thing. Now go and do your make up, I'm sure today boys will be having heart attacks." she commented and I shook my head at that.

I go in my room and honestly I'm looking good

It's a green net mermaid saree with cream quarter sleeves blouse with stone work over it. And the thing is it's totally transparent showing my stomach area.

Indeed I'm looking sexy I have to admit.

I tied my hair in a bun after doing a mid partition and wore earrings. I wore my broken bracelet because I love it very much. And finished my look with a stone bindi on my forehead.

And wow I'm looking for a perfect Indian girl but a modern one.

I went out with my clutch and saw Stuti was also ready.

She has worn an orange saree with golden and black borders with key plain black quarter sleeves blouse.

She isn't showing skin.. She has even worn long earrings and lots of bangles.

She is looking like the perfect Indian traditional girl.

And here we both are different.

"wow you're looking beautiful," I complimented

"and you're looking hot and sexy even in a saree." she said with a wink

"thanks yaar for choosing this one. It's really good." I told her

"hmm I know. Now let's wait for your date." she said and my phone ping with his text

"he is here." I told her and she nodded

She locked the apartment and we went downstairs and saw the same car he bought for the club.

He came out of the car and looked at me. And let's say he is literally checking me out.

His mouth is slightly open.

"ahm ahm Ashu close your mouth otherwise you will catch a fly." Stuti said and he came out of his whatever trance he was

"you both are looking gorgeous. I mean you never wore a saree so I was just a little shocked." He said nervously

"thank me that I made her wear it today." stuti said..

"thank you stuti. 'he said

" now we should go otherwise we will be late. "I told them and they nodded

I am the one who always pushes them to go, if not then then they will not stop their talk.

We reached the venue where the party was held.

Aashu held my hand and I was feeling like we both are couples.

Stuti was behind us giving me a thumbs up and I blushed at that.

God I'm blushing too much these days.

We go inside and we'll only we both are wearing saree not others. Everyone is wearing handkerchiefs in the name of clothing and eyeing my man.

Really my man? You started daydreaming great.

"don't glare at those poor girl doll faces. They didn't kill your cat." Aashu said

"they are eyeing you with lust. So I have to glare at them." I replied

"don't worry doll faces they can only see but I'm all yours." He said and I think I heard something wrong

Yes I heard It completely wrong.

Suddenly he left my hand and walked ahead.

"what happened to him?" stuti asked me

"I don't know." I replied

He walked towards the makeshift stage and stood on it.

"attention girls and boys." He said in the mike

What is he trying to do?

"so today is a very special day for us. As after a few days we will be leaving the college after finishing our course. We have made a lot of memories in this time span that we spent here. Some also fell in love And I also did. I fell for the most beautiful girl I ever saw in my life. She is sweet as honey but spicy as chilli. Has a combination of boldness and softness together. She is perfect in my eyes. I have loved her for a long time but could not tell her so today I will confess my love for her. Don't you want to know who is that girl? "he asked everyone

My heart is beating like it is running in a marathon. I clutched the pallu of my saree tightly.

If it's someone else then I'm going to face my first ever heart break.

The crowd screamed yes in answer and he came down from the stage.

Everyone is looking at him and so is me.

He started to walk towards me and stopped in front of me.

"Ms. Turvi Ahuja, my dear doll face, it's you. I love you. I don't know what you feel for me but I love you very much. I will accept whatever you say.

Will you be my girlfriend doll face?" he asked and I didn't wasted time to say yes

"Yes. I will be and I love you too. I couldn't confess thinking about our friendship." I said and he got up and hugged me

It's the best time of my life but little did I know that my one yes will change my life so much.

# Chapter 11 Superstitious or reality?

Turvi's Pov

Ever saw your dream coming true

? I did. My dream is to get the person's love I love the most.

I still can't believe that he loves me. I mean he really did and he even proposed to me in front of everyone.

I'm now in the arms of my love. We both are dancing with other couples.

"what are you thinking doll face?" he asked me

"nothing thinking how come I become this much lucky," I said

Author: poor you, you're not lucky dear but the unluckiest soul don't worry you will realise it soon

"it's me who is lucky doll face that I got gem like you."He said with a smile

" I was thinking what would have happened if you didn't confess it tonight? I mean I wasn't going to tell you about it and if you also didn't then we both would have not even know what we feel for each other. "I told him

The mere thought makes me shudder.

" yeah that's true. But see I did confess and you accepted. So don't think about those things. "He said

" Now after we go back we will tell our family about it. I don't want to hide it and moreover what if my parents started to search for some suitors for me? "I told him and his face paled a little bit

" Aashu what happened? Are you OK? "I asked him

Whenever his brother's topic came he started to behave weirdly.

" nothing happened I'm fine. Yeah that's true. I will inform my brother soon and yes I want to take you out on a date like an official one as a couple. "He said with a charming smile

"That's great and I want to go to the temple with you tomorrow. I want to take God's blessings. And Start our relationship. "I told him and he nodded

" Aashu I think you should dance a little with Stuti. She is standing there alone. "I told him because I'm not liking her standing alone

" You know you're the best sister, who thinks so much for her cousin. "He said

" well I'm best in everything." I said with a proud smirk

" oh yes that you're." He accepted

We both went towards Stuti who looked a little shocked when Aashu asked her to dance with him.

She hesitantly goes with him when I assure her that I have no problem with it.

They danced a little and she came back because she wasn't feeling much comfortable.

Tonight we got so many congratulations from our batch mates and from other departments as well.

And boy, Shravan's face was worth seeing. He was looking so pissed off.

The night passed away so soon and we had to go back.

Aashu dropped us back and kissed my cheek. And guess what I turn into a tomato and I know Stuti will tease me so I directly ran inside my room.

I know tomorrow morning she will tease me but then I will handle her.

I texted her about going to the temple tomorrow and she agreed.

Next morning I got up without my alarm.

Call it excitement of going out with him.

I took shower and wore white kurti with front long slit from stomach and paired it with white long skirt with golden thread square work on it.

I wore a lot of pink bangles as well because I felt like wearing them.

I left my hair open and wore my daily make up along with a stone bindi.

I went outside and saw Stuti wearing a black salwar suit.

"kisses and All huh." it's the first thing she said when she saw me

"yeah so what? He is my boyfriend and soon to be husband." I told her

"yeah sure he is." she said

"Call him and ask him to come to the temple we should leave now." she said and I nodded

I sent him a text and he said OK.

We both reached the temple and we bought prasad as Stuti didn't have time to make anything.

Aashu also came here and we three went inside.

" Pandit ji, today please do puja for us, we started our new relationship." I told the priest .

"OK beta," he said with a smile and did puja

"God please don't let my love go away from me. And make everyone I love stay safe." I prayed

"take the prasad and this coconut break it in front of god only," the priest said

I took the coconut and broke it but to my horror the coconut is rotten.

"oh god this is not good. Rotten coconut is an indication of bad things." the priest said

"oh pandit ji why are you making it a big issue? It's ok the coconut can be rotten but that doesn't symbolise anything." Aashu said

But I know it does symbolise. Call me superstitious or whatever but it is what I believe.

"Turu don't be sad baby," stuti said hugging Me

"yeah I'm not sad." I told her but she didn't believe me

"That's why I don't come to the temple. All bull shit things." Aashu said and I glared at him

"what? Don't glare at me. I don't like this all." He said

"and yes today sharp 6 pm be ready to go and I will send you a dress as well wear that only." He said and I nodded

We go back to our apartment as we don't have college today.

And soon our exams will start and then finish.

I slept all day because I had nothing to do. At 4 pm I got up and ate a bit.

The dress has already come and it's beautiful.

It's a white shoulder-less Cinderella gown. It looks really costly but how come he can afford it? Leaving my thoughts for now.

I wore the gown and started doing my makeup.

I used bold red lipstick and eyeliner with kajal.

Made a designer bun of my hair and wore earrings.

Pairing it with beige colour heels. And I'm ready officially for my first official date.

Stuti came in my room and gasped

"oh my goodness Turu you're looking like a princess." she commented

"thanks it's all about the dress that is giving me princess vibes." I told her

"Aashu has some serious sense of choice I see. But don't you think it's too costly? I mean he is from a middle class family with only a brother so isn't it too much?" she asked what I was thinking

"I will ask him today about it. I'm only thinking about this." I told her and my phone rang and its Aashu

"hii," I said

"hii, doll face came downstairs soon. I'm waiting." He said

"OK," saying I cut the phone

# Chapter 12 real identity of Aashsank

Turvi's pov

I hugged Stuti and went downstairs to see him standing against a very expensive car.

What the hell is going here? First this dress now this?

"Aashu what..." "I know doll face many questions in your mind and I intend to answer them tonight. I have many things to tell you." He said cutting me off in the middle like he knows what's running in my mind.

"OK," I said because he has already said he will answer me so there is no use to argue over it

He opened the backdoor for me and I realised that he has come as a driver tonight.

I sat inside and he also sat beside me.

We drove towards our destination that only he knew where.

The whole ride passed in silence no one said anything..

We reached in front of a 5 star hotel.

I didn't react because whatever is happening I'm not shocked with it.

Don't tell me he Is going to tell me he is some billionaire or something.

He held my hand and took me inside. The whole hotel is empty.

"Why is no one here?" I asked him

"because I booked the whole hotel for tonight. They all will only serve us." He said and now I'm definitely sure my theory is correct

We walked inside and sat in the middle where a table was placed decorated with candles and jasmine flowers because I love them.

" Want to drink something first? "he asked

" Yes, some hard liquor so I can digest whatever bomb you're going to drop on me." I said and be laughed

" you need to be sober to understand everything. "He said in serious mode

" are you afraid of me doll face? "he asked me and I shook my head in no

" then why are you sweating in full air conditioning? "he asked and I realised indeed I'm sweating like a pig.

" Aashank will you tell me what's going on? you're freaking me out "I told him

" Doll face You know my name right? "he asked me and I looked at him with a duh look

" obviously I know. "I told him

" My name is Aashank Anirudh Raichand, son of Anirudh Raichand and younger brother of Aaryav Raichand. "He said and I swear my jaw fell on the ground

What the actual fuck? Scratch my not cursing policy.

Brother of Aaryav Raichand? Means the owner of A&A academy? And many other companies world wide?

" you are joking right? Please tell me you're joking." I told him no in hell it's possible

He is from a middle class family he told me.

"But did you ever see his brother? No right? He always avoided talking about him. Now the bells rang?" my subconscious asked me

"I'm not joking about this Turvi. It's the truth. I'm sorry for hiding it but I was forced to do so. It is about my security." He said and I know he is damn serious

"Aashank my mind isn't working tell me clearly what you want to." I told him

Honestly I'm shook up by this revelation.

If it's true then maybe I have to forget my love for him.

"doll face, when I was 5 years old my parents died in a car accident as everyone knows. My brother was 17 years old that time. We both have a huge age gap. My brother is very possessive of his loved ones that's why it took me 12 years to come into the world.

Anyways after their death he took my and the business's responsibility on his shoulder. He raised me like his baby, not brother.

He finished his studies along with it as well. But when I turned 15 some people started to attack me and the attacker and reason is unknown to us. I was very scared. Bhai decided to send me somewhere else as a normal boy not as his brother.

I finished my school somewhere else and now I'm here finishing my college. He doesn't like his pictures out much nor he had ever released my pictures.

Everyone knows about me but how do I look no one knows. I wanted to tell you everything when we became friends but bhai had strictly told me not to because it may lead you in trouble and that's the last thing I want to do to trouble you and Stuti.

My other things are true, it's me. Just my identity is different that I'm a billionaire's brother and totally loaded. Soon I will also join business as well. "He said and I look at him

He was forced to lie about his identity. He is correct on his side but what about Me? What about my heart and trust that is betrayed?

" Aashank I understand everything but I guess we should just stop this here only. Our relationship is next to impossible. We both don't match in status. Neither your brother or my family will be happy with it. So I think it's better if we stop it." I told him but only I know how much it hurt to say that.

I love him very much and forgetting him is impossible.

" doll face just relax, calm down ok I know it's a lot to take. But calm down. My bhai has no problem with you being middle class.

He only believes in a good heart, not class or money. Though he hasn't seen you, I told him about you and he is eager to meet you.

And about your family, bhai will manage them. I love you doll face and without you I can't be happy or in peace. Please don't do this. Nothing will change.

I promise everything will be the same as it was before. "He said with lots of hope and love in his eyes

How can I just ignore him?

" It's a lot to take in you know but I love you that's the biggest thing. If you can handle both of our families then I will accept you. It's hard for me to not too."I told him

" nothing will change and after this I won't hide things from you. So with this I have to tell you something about my brother. That you have to know. "He said and I nodded

If I knew that loving him would throw me in the devil's cage I would have never loved him.

# Chapter 13 brother Dearest

Turvi's pov

I am in total shock after hearing everything and he still has something to say? What more he has in his sleeves?

"Doll face my brother is different. I mean he is like everyone but his thinking is a little different." Aashu stuttered

"Aashu cut the crap and tell me clearly what you mean." I told him

He took a deep breath and said

"Hedoesntlikegirlslikeyouwhowearshortdressortalkboldly." He says and I swear I didn't understand a single word he said

"What is your problem man? Why can't you say it clearly?" I asked him

"He doesn't like girls like you who wear short dresses and talk boldly. He likes girls who are silent types like Stuti kind. He believes girls should only wear covered clothes and obey her father before marriage and after marriage her husband.

He is a little orthodox in this matter. Other than that he is good at heart. You just have to pretend in front of him.. Be what I say and everything will be perfect. I promise after marriage we will stay separated so it won't be a problem. But please until that please pretend in front of him. "he said and I look at him with anger

What the fuck is going on here? Is it some shock day or what? He is giving me shock upon shocks.

" Aashank, are you listening to yourself? You are asking me to lie to your brother? In base of lie no relationship stands. What will he think about me after he knows that I am not what I pretended to be.

Scratch about me what about you? You're his brother for god sake what will he think about you? That his own brother lied and cheated him? You told me na that he has raised you after your parents sudden death? Then how can you do it with him? "I asked him

How can he even think about it? It's utterly selfishness, nothing else. His brother deserves truth at least after all he has taken care of him for so long.

" Turvi it's not easy. Do you think I don't love my brother enough? He is my everything. He is my parent, friend, brother, everything. It hurts to think that I have to lie but I can't do anything about it.

I love you as well and I can't choose between you two. You both are important for me. If one lie can save everything then let it be like that only. "He said in a stressed voice

This is the worst date ever that anyone had faced I guess. It wasn't supposed to be like this. It was supposed to be romantic or funny but definitely not this.

" please doll face I'm begging you please agree, I can't stay without both of you. You both are the only people whom I love too much." He said with tears in his eyes

God, no no no please no.

"Aashu please don't cry please. OK I will pretend. I will do what you said. Don't cry I love you. You know that right?" I asked him and he nodded

"OK now if everything is settled should we enjoy our date?" I asked him to distract his mind

"I'm really sorry for officially ruining our first date." He apologies

"it's ok." I told him

it's not OK... but I can't tell him that.

We had our dinner but before that we danced together while he was singing.

And I asked him about his brother hating music so he said it is a lie. It's nothing like that..

God knows how much truth he had hidden from me. He had told me everything but still I feel there is something that he is hiding and that something is really important.

But I didn't pressure him. He will open up to me eventually.

Our date night ended and he dropped Me to my apartment.

I went inside our flat and Stuti started her rapid fire round but I told her that I will talk to her tomorrow and close my room.

I know she must be thinking about what happened but honestly my brain needs rest and time to absorb all the information I gotta know tonight.

I changed my clothes and slept directly.

Next morning I got up early as I slept early.

I did my business and got ready for college. I wore blue denim stripe crop top with white denim mini skirt with a front zip

Once I'm done I go outside of my room and find Stuti doing her favourite work cooking.

"hey babes good morning" I told her

"good morning to you. So now spill everything that happened yesterday." she said and I spill each and every detail

And throughout the way she was gaping like a fish. She is also shocked just like I was.

"Turu you're going to be a billionaire's wife. Oh god your brother in law is A&A academy owner so you can even fulfil your dreams." she said

"Yes but I want to do that on my own not because of some relationship Tags." I told her and she nodded

After some talk we both left for college and in college someone is missing, my new boyfriend.

I called him but his phone isn't reachable.

I left a Voice message for him.

I attended my classes with Stuti but my mind was roaming around Aashu.

He texted me back saying that he is OK but feeling a little off so he skipped college today.

Time started to run and soon our exams started and ended as well. Our relationship is going well but we haven't kissed each other yet. I want to do it once we are engaged.

After our exams now we have to wait for our results that will come out soon. Just few weeks the we will be going back to each others house

I have to inform my parents about our relationship and he has to inform his brother as well.

Once we reach our homes it's our first priority.

I just hope it will be alright but why is my heart giving me weird feelings?

# Chapter 14 unexpected Danger

Turvi's pov

Time passed away so fast that our result is coming out in just two days.

And after it we will leave. Honestly we will miss our stay here for sure.

3 long years we were here so it has become a second home for us. And it will be more painful for Stuti as it is her parents house.

Currently I'm getting ready to go somewhere. Actually it's our batch mates engagement. Yeah you heard it correct.

It's her engagement and we are invited and after 1 week of results she is getting married.

So I think we have 1 week for us to stay here.

As it's engagement so I thought to go with traditional. I wore frock quarter sleeves navy blue kurti with maroon velvet work on chest area and thread floral work on the border with maroon velvet long skirt below.

I mid parted my hair and made a stylish bun. I wore my favourite pair of long earrings and a ring in my finger that's it. I don't feel like wearing bangles and anything.

Already my favourite bracelet is broken.

I sighed at that and touched up my make up.

I wore my heels and took my purse and phone.

I'm ready to go.. Stuti must be ready as well.

Aashu isn't going with us because he has some work that I don't know what.

I went out and saw my Stuti baby ready in an ankle length suit of sparkle golden work on the chest area and black band in the middle with red hangs in which black stripes are present with a middle slit and black long skirt on which golden border work is done.

"wow you're looking gorgeous," we both said together and laughed out loud

"We are so same, aren't we?" I asked her

"yup we are. Honestly you're looking so beautiful. You should try traditional dresses as well sometimes you look good in that.." she said

"and you can try western clothes sometimes you look killer in them." I told her with a wink

"Well no one can win against you. So I back off," she said and I roll my eyes

"Come on, we have to go, we don't have your hubby who will pick us up." she said and I blushed

She knows I blush whenever she mentions him as my husband but still she does it.

"aww someone is blushing. What's the need of Artificial blush Where I can make your cheeks blush naturally?" she said and laughed

"let you find someone girl then you will see how your cheeks stay red permanently. Don't mess with me babe." I warn her and she show me her tongue like a child

We both go to the venue and congratulate our batch mates. Oh did I mention that both are from the same college but different majors? I didn't think.

They are looking so happy and in love.

Maybe I and Aashu will be like this in our engagement as well.

Thinking about those moments fill my heart with immense joy and happiness.

The engagement ceremony passed and we did our favourite work.

Eating food. I tasted everything veg or non veg doesn't matter. I do it everywhere I taste every food item.

And about Stuti whenever she eats something it's like she is calculating something.

Like the spices and other things. But it doesn't matter in my case.

After finishing our food I saw it was already 10 pm.

"Turu we should leave now it's already 10," stuti said and I nodded

We both took ice cream and left while eating It.

It's my favourite flavour chocolate.

"Stuti book a cab please my legs are hurting." I told her

"Yes I'm trying but the network is weak. Give me your phone." she said and I give her my phone

"Damn not working. I guess we have to walk until we get some vehicle." she said and I cursed my luck

Today the alley is empty unlike other days.

It's a very populated place so people normally stay out but not today and that's giving me creepy vibes.

I don't know why I'm feeling like someone is following us.

I know we are no celebrity or anything that someone will follow us but my gut feeling is saying that.

"stuti walk faster," I said and she looked at me questioning but didn't said anything

"oh ho see two innocent beautiful girls walking alone at this time of night. Aren't they warned about this?" we heard some man saying and we got alerted

Fuck our life today Aashu has some work to do.

"stuti run," I said and she nodded

We both hiked our dress up and sprinted from there.

"where will you both go bitches huh? You will come here to us only" we heard another voice saying

We didn't stop nor did we turn back to see them.

We know they are following us.

God please save us.

Suddenly Stuti fell down as her ankle twisted.

"ahh!" she screamed in pain

"Stuti, god, get up we don't have time," I told her but she shook her head

"I can't. You go from here. My leg is hurting very hard. Don't stay back for me. Go." she said and I shook my head

No matter what happens I won't leave my sister here.

"Stuti holds me up and tries to walk. We will at least hide there." I said pointing towards a dark place

Those goons will be coming here.

She held me and I supported her body and dragged her till the dark place.

"Stuti hides here silently, nothing will happen." I told her but my tears are betraying me.

We both are crying silently and praying that God will help us.

"where are those bitches?" we heard same voice screaming and I hold Stuti hand tightly

I shook my head and put my finger on my lips indicating to not make any sound.

"The boss won't be happy if we lose them." I heard the man saying

What does he mean? What boss?

"found you bitches what did you think we won't be able to find you both?" someone said holding my hand and that made us scream.

# Chapter 15 saved and haunting memories

**Warning molestation and abuse ahead**

**Turvi's pov**

"found you bitches what did you think we won't be able to find you both?" someone said holding my hand and that made us scream.

"Leave us what do you want?" I asked the man who is holding me

In answer he only laughed and dragged me outside.

He didn't do anything to Stuti...

"tsk tsk tsk what a beauty we got here. It's such a shame that we have to finish it just like that." one of them said and I look at him

"what the hell do you want from us? Leave us." I said bravely but I'm scared

"oh yeah she has a companion with her right? Bring her here." the man ordered and someone dragged Stuti holding her hairs making her scream in pain

"Leave her you bastards." I screamed but got a tight slap in return

Damn it stinged very hard. My right cheek is burning... I can feel the metallic taste of blood in my mouth.

"don't you dare to raise your voice bitch. Otherwise we won't make it easy for you." that man said who slapped me hard

"boss this both bitches are sexy as fuck It will be a waste if we didn't taste their vagina once." that man said eyeing us lustfully

For the first time I'm feeling naked though I'm covered totally.

"Why are you doing this with us? Leave us please leave us. What have we done to you?" stuti pleaded in front of them

My poor sister is in this mess because of me, if only I left before.

"you didn't do anything but your this sexy ass friend did.. And you have to pay for her as well." that man said and I can't understand what he meant to say

What did I do?

My chain of thoughts broke when I felt someone toring my sleeves. I tried to fight but he blocked me.

There are 3 in total number..

Stuti is trying to fight another one who is trying to kiss her and is touching her breasts.

"Leave us!" I screamed and this time I got a punch in return and I fell on the ground.

Mumma! God it's painful. My vision is becoming blurry because of the pain.

We both are lying on the floor getting abused by these monsters.

That's it. This is our end.. Our life is finished. We will end up getting raped and murder.

Suddenly we heard a car's sound. Someone is coming here..

God please let someone be good please.. I prayed and it's like my prayer got heard.

I suddenly heard a gunshot. And everything stopped.

"Leave those girls otherwise we will shoot you." I heard a manly voice saying

It's dark. I can't see the person clearly.

"Boss, it's the police , I guess we have to leave." the one who is top of me said

"Yes we have to leave," another one said

They get up from top of us and stand up...

"we surrender don't shoot us," one of them said

"step aside from the girls." another voice said

They stepped aside from us and suddenly started to run in the opposite direction.

They fired on them but I don't know if they hit them or not.

Suddenly two pairs of shoes came in my vision.

"don't be afraid of us Ms. We are police officers." one of them said

"please help us." I said in pain

I looked at Stuti who had passed out already.

One of them carried me in his arms but I could not see anything it's blur.

Soon my eyes got closed and I welcome the darkness

Beep! Beep! Beep!

That annoying sound disturbed my peaceful sleep.

Ahh! Someone please shut this..

I open my eyes to close them again.

God who opened the curtains?

I again opened my eyes and found myself in a hospital room?

I looked to my side and saw Stuti was there as well.

"how are you now?" someone asked me

I turned my head and saw a very handsome man standing in front of me but not more than my Aashu.

Suddenly I remembered what ever happened earlier.

"I'm fine, just a little pain in my cheek. But who are you?" I asked him

"I'm Suryash Mehra, an IPS officer. And he is my friend Arun Sehgal," Suryash said pointing towards his friend

Why do they look familiar to me? Where have I seen them?

"how is Stuti?" I asked him and he pointed towards Stuti and I nodded

"she is fine but just had a twisted ankle nothing else. She fainted because of extreme fear." He said and looked at her with concern?

Am I seeing correctly or imagining things?

Turvi tu officially pagal ho chuki hai. (Turvi ,you have gone mad officially.)

"Why isn't she awake?" I asked him

"she was but again fainted she is still in shock." He replied

"I don't know why I'm feeling I have seen you both somewhere. But I can't remember it." I told them

"You saw us at that engagement party. We are the groom's brother's colleagues. We were passing from there when suddenly Arun heard someone screaming and that's how we reached you both." He informed

"thank you so much for saving us. Can I get my phone? I need to call someone." I said and he give me my phone that is half broken

Great, now I have to buy a new one.

I dialled Aashu number and he picked it up

"Doll face what happened? Why are you calling me at 4 am?" he asked me and I broke down in sobs

I couldn't say anything about it. I can't think what would have happened if Suryash and Arun didn't find us.

"doll face why are you crying? What happened?" he asked

"Aashu! We are in the hospital." I told him and cried more

"Turvi what are you saying? What happened tell me clearly." He screamed in the phone

"if you have no problem can I talk?" Suryash asked and I give him my phone

He talked with Aashu and told him everything and told him about the hospital as well.

My tears haven't stopped at all. Hearing his voice my all pain had come out that I had hidden in my heart.

" don't worry your boyfriend is coming over here. And you both are safe. We will try to find out who attacked you both very soon." surya said and I nodded absent mindedly

My brain is thinking about those times when I was this helpless and abused.

I was only 10 years old when one of my father's distant relatives tried to molest me. But Mumma came at time and saved me....

She threw him out of the house but asked me to not tell papa about it. It will degrade our name in society. Stuti wasn't there at that Time so she doesn't know.

I didn't tell anyone about it and kept it in my heart. But all those memories are again refreshed by today's incident.

No matter how much I pretend to be strong but from inside I'm scared. Scared of being forced..

My breathing is becoming hard. It's painful to breathe.

I am trying to inhale as much I can but it's futile. My lungs are burning..

Suddenly I felt a prick in my hand and everything started to become normal and again I fell asleep.

# Chapter 16 time to return

Turvi's pov

Everything is dark here, no light is available. My eyes are tightly shut. I can hear some voices but they aren't clear.

I can feel someone caressing my hand and I know this touch very well.

I want to open my eyes but something isn't letting me open them.

I am fighting with it and finally I open it.

The first thing I saw was Aashu holding my hand tightly while he was crying.

"Aashu," I said and he smiled looking at me

"Doll face you're awake. I'm really sorry doll face please forgive me. It's all because of me." He apologies to me

"Why are you apologising to Aashu? It's not your fault. You didn't know that this would happen. You were busy with your work and that is natural." I told him but he kept blaming himself

"stuti? Did she get her consciousness back?" I asked him to divert the topic

"yeah she is there looking at you. She is still in daze but conscious." He said and I looked at her

She was looking at me only.

"when can we go? I don't like it here." I whined like a child

"very soon doll face." He said and kissed my forehead

I was in relief that he is here with me now no one can touch me.

"Stuti are you OK?" I asked her

She only blinked her eyes as yes.

I closed my eyes again and again I fell asleep.

When I got up next time I found Stuti sitting on her bed and officer Suryash was talking with her.

I got up and saw Aashu come inside holding some bags.

"you can go home so I bought clothes for both of you." He informed me and I looked at him in a questioning manner

"stuti told me the size." He said and I look at Stuti who nodded

I took my bag and he gave another to Stuti.

He helped me to get down from the bed and dropped me to the bathroom.

I took shower as I was all dirty and sticky. After showering I open the bag of clothes to find inner wears as well with the clothes. It's a lacey white bra and matching panties.

Don't tell me he bought it. I will die in shame in front of him.

I wore it quickly and wore the dress he had bought as well.

It's a full sleeves white shirt with petal plates over the neck and cuffs with a cream skirt of lace work over it and it reaches below my knees.

He surely loves white colour just like me.

I came out changing and helped Stuti to go inside as her ankle sprained.

She opens the door and I help her to go out after sometime.

She is wearing black jeans with loose bottom cuffs paired with white and horizontal striped t-shirt.

Aashu definitely knows our choice. Wait if he has bought my inners means hers as well

God just kill me please.

OK ok I was joking I'm too young to die.

I'm only 22 for heaven sake.

No male is present here now to give us privacy.

"Stuti you're fine right?" I asked her

"I'm OK Turu don't worry about me. You're fine right?" she asked

"Yes I'm fine." I told her

I called Aashu inside and he came.

He wanted to take us to his house here that belongs to his brother for our safety but obviously we denied there is no way we will stay there.

He was very tense because of this incident. I guess he is still blaming himself.

After a lot of arguments he dropped us to our apartment only.

He helped me to take stuti up and settle inside.

Stuti will take one more day to walk without any problems

He has bought us food as well because Stuti can't cook and Me well I don't want to cook and land us both in hospital once again.

So yup outside food is the last option.

We both stayed in our rooms only. I don't know why but I can't remember what exactly happened yesterday night. everything is blurry for me.

I only remember that we were attacked but then who did it and how I don't remember that.

We decided to hide it from our parents because they will get tensed without any reason and can't even do anything from there.

I tried to dance ignoring the pain to keep my mind busy and it worked. I forgot everything for sometime.

The day passed away slowly and I decided to sleep with Stuti for that night. Because she was still scared

Next day came and passed in a blink with Aashu with us. He spent his whole day with us and left at night.

Today is our result and I got ready for college.

I wore black polo pants with white quarter sleeve shirt that can be knotted from the hem in front. And tied my hair in a top knot.

Once done I go outside to find Stuti in a brick colour off shoulder plain ankle length summer dress with joint off shoulder cape.

Wow she changed her style not bad.

"you're looking nice," I said and she smiled in return

We reached college and directly went to check the list. We could have checked online but online isn't accurate every time so we don't trust it.

Everyone is trying to search their names on the board.

" Congratulations Stuti, you topped the whole college." Aashu said coming and I hugged Stuti tightly

"Congratulations girl, your hard work paid off. Now you can start your culinary journey as you have finished college." I told her and she nodded with a teary smile

She is a very hard working student and her hard work really worked.

"what about mine?" I asked him

"well you got 60% and I got 70%"he said smugly

He got more than me so he is rubbing it on my face.

" whatever. I got this much, that's a big deal. Now everything is over so we will take the mark sheet and then tomorrow go back to our home. And you my lover boy is coming there with your brother if not then I'm gonna scratch that handsome face of yours that no one could recognise. "I told him seriously

We are leaving tomorrow. I don't want to attend the wedding after whatever happened. I want to go home.

" OK ok don't threaten Me doll face I will

Bring my brother there and you remember what I told you. "He said and I nodded

I know what to do about that.

I was happy thinking that now nothing will go wrong and I will get the fairy tale with my love but little did I know that love or life none of it is a fairy tale.

# Chapter 17 a shocking proposal

Turvi's pov

Home sweet home.. No matter where ever you stay you will get peace in your home only.

Finally we are back to our home where we belong. I have worn a pink  chikankari sleeveless long frock with pink leggings along with link net dupatta to make my Mumma happy.

Because I won't be wearing these clothes often.

And Stuti had worn a nude brownish pink colour plain kurti with same colour straight pants along with same colour dupatta or glitter horizontal lines work over it.

We just reached here by train and I can see my Mumma and papa waiting for us.

We both looked at each other and nodded. And just ran towards them and hugged them tightly.

I hugged papa and she hugged Mumma.

I am more close to papa and she is more to Mumma.

We do it always whenever we come back on vacation we always run and hug them.

"How are you, my children? We missed you so much." Papa asked us

"We are perfectly fine and we miss you too." we both replied in unison

"Now come and give me a hug, Turvi." Mumma said and I broke my hug with papa and hugged Mumma while Stuti hugged papa

"finally you both are here now I won't let you go away from me until you're married." Mumma said and I rolled my eyes

Her every topic ends with marriage only.

"OK now come on we have to go home and eat something we are hungry." stuti whined and we laughed

She looks cute whenever she whines like a child.

Papa put our luggage in the car and we sat inside.

He drove towards our home.

We reached after a good 45 minutes.

Once Mumma opened the door I bolted inside and sprawled over the couch.

I'm exhausted totally after this train journey.

"god Turvi you're 22 years old. Not 2 years old when will you behave like an adult not a kid? At this age I was married to your papa.." here we go with her ranting

Her same rant about my behaviour and her marriage. God save me.

"Mumma first you decide I'm an adult or a kid. Whenever I say something you say to Turvi you're a kid you don't understand anything then again you say for god sake Turvi you're 22 and all. So first decide then we'll talk."I told her with a wink and her face is worth looking

I can see papa and Stuti try to not laugh out loud.

" God this girl has got a sharp tongue I see. Staying away from us has changed you a lot. I have to again train you to be in control. One day because of your sharp tongue you will be in great trouble remembering that." Mumma said it like every time and I ignored her royally.

" Masi (Maternal aunt) leaves her; she is a spoiled brat. You don't waste your energy on her. You come and talk to me. I'm your perfect daughter right?"stuti said to calm the situation like every time

Sometimes I think she is her daughter and I'm adopted one here.

She is the perfect girl material for my mother.

" Yeah sometimes I think you're my daughter and the one whom I have raised is nowhere near me." Mumma said

I'm glad I'm not like you Mumma. I am not a submissive like you with old thinking.

"ok ok now stop this and you both go to your rooms. You must be tired." papa said to end the drama and it worked

I just took my lazy ass up to my room and opened it.

It's the same as the way I left it. I took a deep breath and decided to shower and then sleep.

I changed my clothes into soft comfortable ones that had a lemon green tank top tucked under a green floral short skirt and directly hugged my bed.

Once my head hit the pillow I lost myself in sweet dreams.

"Turu wake up and eat something." I heard Stuti's voice and groaned in annoyance

Yaha vi shanti se koi sone nahi deta. (no one let me sleep in peace here as well)

"let me sleep please." I said and stuff my face more in the pillow

"OK sleep masi made your favourite Biryani and chicken tikka with kadai paneer and butter naan." she said in sing sang voice

The food items made my mouth water automatically.

I got up and looked at her sheepishly.

"what happened aren't you sleepy?" she asked sarcastically

Can I just hit her? She is teasing me after making me wake up from my sweet dreams.

"don't plan my murder girl in your head. I know that looks very well on your face. Whenever you curse someone or kill someone in your head you give that look." she said and I rolled my eyes

"yeah roll them more and they will fall off," said my bitchy subconscious

Tu chup nahi reh sakti kya? (Can't you stay quiet?)

No answer came.

"It's good that you know it then why are you teasing me and calling for your death?" I asked her smiling and I know it's looking creepy as fuck

"Whatever, now get your lazy butt up and wash your face and come down." she said like my Mumma

"my butt is a sexy girl, not lazy." I told her to tease her and she shook her head and left making me laugh hard

I got up and washed my face and suddenly I remembered I haven't checked my phone for a long time.

I checked it and see 20 missed calls  and 15 texts from Aashu fuck!

My phone is in silent mode why god why?

I immediately text him back that I was sleeping and my phone was in silent mode and I saw he has written that he has talked with Stuti.

The text got a single tick and I sighed. I kept my phone on charge as it needs to be charged as well.

I will call him after eating. I went downstairs and the Aroma hit me hard.

So delicious. I raked my eyes over the dining table and bingo it has our favourite items only.

Biryani and chicken tikka for me and naan and kadai paneer for her.

And in sweet it's our mutual favourite jalebi with rabri kulfi.

I know I must be drooling by now.

"no need to drool standing here come and eat here." Mumma said and I listen to her without delaying

I served myself with the yummy food.

And started to eat like I'm starved for days.

"No one is eating your food eat properly. The man who will marry you will definitely curse us for giving you to him. God save him." Mumma said and once again I ignored her comment

It's nothing new that I'm hearing but she doesn't know that my Aashu isn't like that he has accepted me the way I'm. And I love him more for it but just angry a little about that lie he told me and asked me to say.

But no worries I will punish him for that too after our marriage. He has to pay for lying to me.

We finished eating and was eating the sweet when my mother said

"you know I have to tell you both something." she said

"what?" I asked

"we got a proposal from a good family for marriage." she said and me and Stuti both froze in our place.

# Chapter 18 Stuti's Marriage?

Turvi's pov

We both are looking at Mumma in pure shock.

"What happened? Why both of you are looking like some ghost has appeared in front of you." Mumma asked us.

"Masi, whose proposal has come and for whom?" Stuti asked calmly because my tongue was tied already.

God not for me. Because I won't marry anyone other than my Aashu.

"It has come for you, my child. They have chosen you. We haven't said anything to them yet just wanted to inform you first then we will agree. The boy is perfect. He is an IPS officer and his family has a good reputation and business as well. He is a perfect match." Mumma said looking at Stuti who looked like a deer caught in light.

I sighed in relief but then my anger got the best of me.

"What do you mean by informing her Mumma? And first of all, why did you even wait? You should have said no. Stuti only had finished her college and she had a long way to go. She had to achieve her goals as well. Just like I have to. How can you even think about it? I don't care if it's an officer or minister but pursuing your dream is the important thing. "I told her clearly.

"Shut up Turvi. Your tongue has got really sharp. Do you understand more than me or us? Good proposals don't come regularly. And they had said that Stuti can complete her future studies after marriage; they have no problem with it. And I have decided it's good for her. She is like my daughter and my responsibility and I won't do anything wrong to her. She is what I have left as a sign of my sister and brother in law. And you will also get married once I found a good choice for you. And don't even think about saying no because I won't listen. And your papa can't do anything about it." Mumma said.

What the fuck? How can she say that?

"I won't marry anyone that you find for me. Neither will I let you ruin her life. Leave your superstition and orthodox thinking back and move on. I already love someone and he also loves me. When I say he will come with his elder brother to talk with you all. I didn't want to say it like this but you just didn't give me any other option. And Stuti won't marry anyone until she becomes a chef and achieves her goals." I told her finally.

Stuti shook her head and papa looked amazed and Mumma was gaping.

"Do you love someone? And you didn't even tell us? " Mumma said.

Here we go with her drama.

"Yes I do and I haven't done any crime by not telling you. I just got in a relationship with him a few days back. We both loved each other for a long time. But didn't say anything. And do you know who he is? Aashank Raichand, the younger brother of Aaryav Raichand." I told her and she looked shocked.

"A&A academy owner Aaryav Raichand? Who has his business worldwide? " papa asked and I nodded.

"No way it can happen. How can a millionaire fall for a middle-class girl? It's a trap or something. " Mumma said.

"Mumma please it's not any trap or something. We both love each other and want to get married. " I told her.

"Ok, ask him to come with his brother. Let me see what it is. "Mumma said.

"And about Stuti's marriage, let her decide it. You think about yourself. Stuti you tell me don't you have faith in your masi? Do you think I will do something wrong to you? " Mumma started her emotional blackmail.

"Masi, please don't say that. I trust you with my life. I know you will do something good only. I am ready to meet the boy. If I like him then I will get married but if not then please don't force me." she said and Mumma smiled.

"See how polite she is unlike you who always scream and get angry. Sometimes I think I failed to raise you correctly. And maybe that's the reason that Mrs. Mehra chose our Stuti for her son, not you." Mumma said.

Like I was dying to be chosen by someone.

"By the way, when did you get this proposal? "I asked her.

I am not surprised that papa has kept his mouth shut throughout the argument or discussion whatever you want to call it. He always does it whenever this situation arises.

"Remember when last time you both came here we went to a wedding ceremony? "Mumma asked and I nodded.

"There I introduced you both to them but you totally ignored them and was busy on your phone and Stuti bent in front of them and took their blessing. She even talked to them and she even

helped Mrs. Mehra when she was feeling weak. After a few days, she called me and asked me for her hand in marriage for her son. But I told her that I will talk with Stuti first then I can say anything. They are waiting for more than 4 months to get the answer and think about how much she has impressed them. At least my raising came handy and my Stuti got a gem for her." Mumma ranted the whole incident.

Oh Lord, I hate these marriage ceremonies, that's why I'm always trying to avoid it.

The guests have no work to do other than matchmaking.

I mean why? You came to eat on one's marriage, eat and leave. But now they had to poke their nose and make another couple married so they could attend the party. Ugh! Irritating.

"I will inform Mrs. Mehra about it and one more thing her son doesn't stay here as he is posted in Bangalore where you both completed your studies," Mumma said.

"Inform your boyfriend as well we will like to meet him." papa said something for the first time and I nodded

"I will papa, he is waiting for that only. He will come very soon. "I told him with a smile.

"Now finish your dessert and go to your rooms," Mumma ordered us and I ate my dessert but I could see that Stuti had lost her Interest in that dessert.

# Chapter 19 beyond Surprise

Turvi's pov

I came back to my room and found my phone ringing. I saw the caller Id and it's Aashu.

I removed my phone from the charger and received his call.

"Hi Aashu." I said

"Do I know you?" he asked and I know he is angry because I didn't pick his calls

"Aashu please don't be angry I'm sorry. You know what happened? Mumma find a marriage proposal

" I told him to divert his brain.

"what? How? When? You didn't say yes right? You can't say yes to anyone else no you can't." He ranted in one breath

"Aashu calms down. It's not for me but for Stuti. Poor girl has to see the boy and tolerate this drama." I told him and heard him sighing

"Why is your mom dying to get her married? I mean come on you both only graduated." He said and I raised my brow

"so you mean we both should not get married right?" I asked him with a smirk

"No, when did I say that? We will get married and I will help you to fulfil your dreams." He said and I smiled

"I know you will." I said and we talked for some time more

I even told him that I have told mumma about us and he said he will come here with his brother this weekend only and I can't be more happy.

After saying good night I directly jumped on my bed and slept.

Next morning mumma literally threw me out of my room and asked me to help her in decorating home as the boy is coming with his family to see our Stuti.

Stuti is cooking delicious food for them. She even gave me some to taste.

I helped mumma and then she gave me a saree and asked to dress Stuti up.

I look at the saree and oh lord what is this? Mumma can be really over excited sometimes.

She has given this heavy saree with full sleeves blouse.

I facepalmed myself and searched in my almirah.

I have a lot of sarees and lehengas but I don't wear any of them much.

I found a multi coloured net saree with pink boat neck quarter net sleeves blouse.

I drag Stuti to my room and ask her to wear the saree.

Once she came wearing it I sat her down and did my work.

I don't want her to get married but I won't show her any less from any angle. My sister is perfect from every angle.

I did her make up and left her hair open.

Earrings and bangles that's it she is ready.

"Listen, you don't have to say yes to this marriage if you don't like the boy ok?" I asked her and she nodded

She hasn't talked much to anyone after the announcement my mumma did.

Soon we heard the bell ringing and Stuti stiffed beside me.

Stuti's pov

My body froze as the bell rang. My future husband is here.

Yes future husband because masi has already fixed everything and I don't think my no will change anything.

She is ranting about the boy only from morning showing how much she likes him.

My parents died when I was 5. From that time only masi and mausa ji (uncle) are my guardians. I have always listened to them and always said yes to whatever they told me to do.

They have raised me and I should be grateful to them.

I want to be a chef because it's my passion and dream. I love to cook very much but I don't know now if I can do it or not now.

"Stuti, nothing will happen, just relax." Turu said from beside

It's Easy for her to say because it's not her who's life and career is at stake.

No I am not jealous of her nor am I angry at her. Why would I be? I love her very much and It's not her fault as well but still right now everything looks irritating.

I took a deep breath and went into the kitchen.

There is a back space that has access to our kitchen.

I have to serve them tea when Masi will say.

Turu is also wearing today a lemon yellow ankle length sleeves frock with a thick chicken border in the bottom along with a lemon yellow net dupatta

because of masi who forced her to do so.

I can hear Turu talking loudly. But can't understand what she is saying.

Masi called me and I held a tray of tea with snacks.

I walked inside and kept my eyes low.

"see our Stuti also came." masi said

"go beta serve them tea," masi said and I nodded

I served his father first then mother and lastly I came to him.

I gave him tea without even looking at him and stood beside Turu.

I haven't looked at him yet.

"Stuti, did you see your groom?" she asked and I shook my head

"Then look at him, girl. I'm sure you will be surprised." she said and I dared to look at him and gasped

What the hell is he doing here?

It's the same man who saved us that day. Suryash Mehra.

I guess I was staring at him too long that he also looked at me and caught me staring at him.

He only smirked at me and looked away.

What the hell just happened.

"babe your groom just smirked at you. He caught you checking him out." Turu said

Why god why?

"I think Suryash and Stuti both should talk with each other alone." His mom proposed and I hold Turu's hand tightly

I don't want to go with him. I'm scared and nervous. Ahh! He even caught me checking him out.

"Ahh!" Turu whimper and I released her hand

I was literally squeezing her hand.

"Stuti beta take Suryash in your room." masi said and I nodded

He got up and gestured to me to go ahead. God save me.

"Stuti no need to be scared if he did something you just scream I will be nearby outside of your room ok. I will save you. Just don't freak out." Turu said and I nodded my head

I walked ahead of him following me.

# Chapter 20 Finally fixed

Stuti's pov

I open the door of my room and

gesture  him to go inside.

He entered my room and started to scrutinize it.

My room is clean and organised. So he can't find anything wrong.

"so you didn't told your masi and mausa ji that you both were attacked back in Bangalore?" he asked and to be honest

I melted hearing his deep voice. It's so sexy..

OK now I should just stop my imagination.

"Yes we didn't because it will only make them tense nothing else. And I request you that please don't tell them." I requested him

"Hmm I won't. They don't need to be tense for my wife." He said and I looked at him like he has grown two heads

"what? Why that shocked look?" he asked

"I didn't say yes." I told him

He thinks highly of himself..

"yet, you didn't say yes yet but by looking at your masi I can say it will be yes only. So you will be my wife soon. By the way, did you wear a saree today or do you wear it often? You're looking pretty good." He said boldly and at a point he is correct

Masi will definitely manipulate me.

" I do wear every kind of clothing. And if you know that it will be yes then why when wasting your time in this? Go and tell everyone that you're ready. And moreover you knew about this from long. You know who I'm yet you kept mum. What even I can expect" I said angrily

This man is clearly mocking me here.

"Exactly I know what they will say but I want to know what you think about all this. What expectations you have from this relationship. What are your dreams for the future? I am a very straightforward person, Stuti.

And I can say that I liked you from the very first time I saw you in that marriage. All the girls were caked up with makeup and wearing good for nothing dresses but only two girls are there without a ton of makeup and in decent dress one who doesn't give to shit anyone else down to earth and guess what that shy down to earth girl touched my heart. It's me who asked my parents to talk with your guardians.

I would have told you that time only about this arrangement but then I didn't want to freak you out. It is better that your family told you everything. Now you tell me. If you say no then there will be no marriage. But before saying anything, answer my questions. "He said in one go

Honestly I'm baffled by his confession.

" I want to be a well known chef. I want my husband to support me in my dream and help me to reach it. I am confused and scared about this. Everything is new for me.

I have never engaged in any relationship ever since I know that I will be doing arranged marriage. I want my partner to be honest and loyal with me before becoming my husband.

I want him to become my friend. About love I will say that maybe not immediately I will love him or expect him to love me but after a time at a point I will love my husband with everything I have.

I haven't seen my parents married life but I have my masi and mausa ji. They are different from each other but they are perfect for each other. I want a relationship like them or maybe better than them. "I told him what I think

He looked amused as a smile graced his lips making him look more handsome than he already is.

There is no doubt he is handsome. Girls must be dying for him and here he chose a simple girl like me.

" miraculously our thoughts are the same about this thing. I also want the same thing from my life partner. As I'm an IPS officer I need my wife's full support to do my duty.

And if you agree to marry me I promise I will be the support you need to reach your goal not the obstacle in your path.

And I'm glad to know that you find me handsome and you're not simple or plain. You're a kind of your own. And I like this about you. You are submissive yet you know how to put your point. That's a great quality. And yes from next time check before you say anything thinking you're saying it in your mind. "He said and my cheeks heated up

Shit I said those things loudly. Just kill me someone.

" So whatever your decision is, I'm ready to accept it, may it be yes or no. And one more thing don't say yes in any pressure. Listen to your heart.

From my side it's yes and you know that. Rest depends on you. And yes for your knowledge I'm only 26 so we don't have much age difference between. And your room is nice. Clean and organised. It shows that you're a clean freak and perfectionist just like me. You are a nice girl and I will definitely feel lucky to have you as my wife. "He said with a smile and left from my room

Tha kya ye? Kya bolke chale gaye? (What was that? What did he say before going?)

Was it an indication to show how perfect we are?

He at least gave me a chance to open up my heart to him when my masi didn't bother to ask. He is a gentleman and his behaviour screams it.

Should I say yes? He seems good to me.

I took a deep breath to calm myself down.

I went outside of my room and Turu came in front of me.

"everything OK? Did he do something or said something inappropriate?" she asked and I shook my head in no

"why are you all red huh? Aisa kya Keh diya usne?(What did he tell you)" she asked me in a teasing tone and I just glared at her

"So I guess I can call him jiju from now on. Meri mummy bari ho gayi hai Aur ab khud shadi karke sachi me mummy banegi. Haye khushi se Mar hi na jau mai. (My mother is grown up & after marriage she will truly be a mother.  I will die in happiness )" she said and wipe her imaginary tears

This girl is a total dramebaaz.

"we should go otherwise Momma will be coming to find us." she says and I nodded

We reached the main hall and saw everyone looking at me including him.

"Stuti beta aap ka jawab kya hai? Ha ya na? (What's your answer? Yes or no?)" his mother asked

I looked at everyone and then my eyes landed on him and found him staring at me already.

for some reason I just can't break our eye contact neither does he bother to break it on his own.

Turu pinched my hand, making me break our eye lock.

"I'm ready for this marriage. It's a yes from me." I said and looked at him who had big smile on his face

And if I'm not wrong he mouthed "congratulations Mrs. Mehra" to me and winked making me go all red

"congratulations Mrs. Mehra." Turu said means she saw it

God now she will tease me about it…

Masi brings sweets and they all feed each other.

His mother gave me diamond bangles and they decided that after 2 weeks we will get engaged and 2 months later we will get married.

They left after sometime but before leaving he gave me his number and asked to call him I only nodded my head at that.

Masi is really happy and Turu and Mausa ji are also happy.

After half an hour they left and someone came into our home and pressed the bell.

I was downstairs and decided to open the door.

When I did I saw the person whom I was expecting least now.

# Chapter 21 meeting Big Brother

Turvi's pov

Ever heard about getting shock upon shocks on the same day? Well it's happening with me.

It's been hardly two days since we came back to our house and I'm getting shocked.

First Stuti's marriage proposal then her groom came out to be that officer who saved us and then their marriage got fixed after 2 months as well.

And now this.. Want to know what I'm doing right now?

I'm getting ready to meet my brother -in -law.

Yes you heard it correct. That idiot Aashu came to tell us last night that today morning he will come with his brother to talk about our marriage

Can you believe it? Means he is telling me just a few hours before meeting?

He and his brother both are sitting downstairs and I'm tying my hair in a bun.

He has told everything to my parents and even told mumma that I have to pretend like a sanskari adarshwadi nari.

And no need to guess what my Momma said. She said she will make sure I look like a total sanskari.

I mean what's this all year?

"Turu don't curse your husband in your mind too much." Stuti said as she made me wear the heavy earrings.

I am wearing a silk plain yellow long kurti with long slit from both sides with yellow churidar along with silk cream dupatta with pink thick border.

My eyes are lined with kohl deeply making them pop out more.

My Momma didn't make me wear a saree why? Because it shows skin and according to Aashu his brother doesn't like the girls who show their skin..

So yeah she found this dress for me.

"It's easy for you to tell Stuti that don't think or curse them because you don't have to pretend what you're not. He is basically asking me to pretend that I'm not in front of his brother." I told her

She kept mum because she knew I'm right.

"Now get up and go into the kitchen and serve them." Mumma said coming from downstairs

I silently did what she said and went in front of those brothers who were talking with papa.

I went towards them and was about to place the tray when Mumma fake coughed making me realise that I had to serve them.

I took the tray and held it in front of them.

First I served Aaryav bhai, his brother. He took the cup and looked at me with hatred?

Are yaar ab maine kya kar diya? Ato gayi full covered clothing pehenke. Maine kaunsi uski paisa churai hai? (And now

What have I done? I came covering myself.  Did I steal his money or what?)

But one thing caught my eye. Same blue as in my dreams.

God Turvi shut up, it's not a time or place to think those things.

I shook my head and gave tea to Aashu who just pleaded with his eyes to not lose my calm. I just averted my eyes from his and gave tea to papa.

After this I sat in front of them like some show piece. Stuti is also sitting beside me.

"so you're the Turvi that my brother loves, you're the winner of that dance Competition right?" he asked straightly

I like him. He doesn't beat around the Bush just like me.

"Yes sir," I replied

"So Turvi you're a very traditional girl aren't you? Soft spoken submissive kind of like my brother said?" he asked and I looked at Mumma and papa who is looking a little bit awkward by his question

"I'm my kind sir. I don't know what your brother told you about me. I will like it if you just judge me on my behaviour, not on someone else's words." I told him with a smile

Aashu is shaking his head in no.

"Interesting, so what is your kind?" he asked

"my kind is I do what I feel is right." I replied

"So dance is your passion?" he asked me

"Yes , sir dance is my everything I love the dance most. Becoming a professional and famous dance choreographer is my dream." I told him

"Does it mean you love dance more than my brother? If he asks you to choose between them then what will you choose?" he asked

He surely knows how to question someone to irritate them.

"If someone asks you to choose between your eyes and ears, what will you choose?" I asked him

"why will I chose one?" he asked

"exactly why will I choose one? Aashank and dance both are like my body organs. How can I choose one?" I asked him and he smirked

Not a cruel one but an amused one.

"you're surely a witty girl with a sharp tongue I see." He said

"OK so last question if I kick aashank out from my property and don't give him a penny what will you do?" he asked and that got on my nerves

What does he think I'm?

"Sir if you Don't know then I will suggest you ask your brother about our relationship. I always knew that he is from a middle class family with an elder brother. As everyone else. I accepted his proposal as a middle class boy only. I believe in the hard work my parents have taught me. If you kick your brother out from your property still it won't affect my Feelings for him because I loved him not his bank balance. "I said a little angrily

" very well then. I guess you're really perfect for my brother. "He said but I'm not happy with it

" Sir before you can reach in any conclusion just wait for some minutes

"saying I ran upstairs ignoring Momma who was calling my name.

I entered my room and locked it. Stuti is banging my door but I won't open it.

I changed my dress as fast as I can. And came out of my room.

" Turu what are you doing? "she asked but I won't give explanation to her now

" I'm doing the necessary thing. "saying I go downstairs

Everyone is looking at me with shock and Aashu is glaring at me angrily.

I stand in front of his brother.

" what is this Turvi? "he asked as I open the blazer

I had changed my dress In a black and cream spot panda print sleeveless crop top and mini pencil skirt which reached till my mid thigh.

" Sir before you say anything about our relationship or anything I want to tell you the truth. That was not me. Wearing that kind of clothes and submissive and soft spoken that's not me. By my answers you must have understood that I'm anything but a submissive.

Whatever aashank has told you is a lie. I wear short modern clothes like this. I curse, I drink, and I fight for the right thing. I even do puja and wear traditional clothes as well.

I do both things. But I'm not definitely what aashank said. He knows what kind of girls you like so he makes me present like that. Any relationship can't start on the basis of lies. At a point you would have known everything and that time you would have felt cheated. And I honestly don't want to do that.

After knowing what I'm if you still want to get us married then I will be happy but if you reject as well then also its ok. You're his guardian, you had raised him from childhood after your parents demise. So you have every right to choose his life partner. I know aashank must be cursing me and hating me for saying these things but I can't lie in this matter because I don't want your relationship to get damaged because of me. "I told him what I wanted to and waited for his answer

Only he knew what he would say.

# Chapter 22 he knows everything

Turvi's pov

Everyone is looking at me and then him with eyes wide open.

Aashu is glaring at me for saying the truth but it's the right thing to do only.

Truth is the only way to start something new. Lies don't stay intact for long.

"Impressive, I wasn't expecting truth from you not at all. But you proved me wrong. My brother thinks that he can hide things from me. He thinks I didn't run a background check on the girl he claims to love. Tsk!" He said and Aashu looked at him wide eyed

Well looks like if I didn't say the truth we both would have been doomed.

" Bhai how? "Aashu asked

" Do you think I'm a fool Aashsank? No right? I knew from the start that she isn't what you told me. I didn't expect this from you. First I thought maybe your lover made you lie but here the entire scene is different. Jab apna hi sikka khota ho to dusro kya kehna. (when my own coin is at fault then what should I say to others.) "he said with disappointment clear in his tone

" Bhai I did not mean to hurt you but I love Turvi very much and I can't lose her at any cost please bhai I'm sorry. "Aashu pleaded

We all are watching the drama silently. What can we even say?

" Anyways you have chosen a nice and honest girl here. Who cares about our relationship more than her love life. I'm really impressed with you Turvi. I am ready to make you the daughter in law of the Raichand family." He said and I left the breath I was holding till now

Finally he agreed. Thank god I said the truth. Otherwise he would never have agreed.

" Mr. And Mrs. Ahuja I will like it if the engagement is done soon. Marriage can be done later. "He said

" Mr. Raichand after 2 weeks it's Our other daughter Stuti's engagement. If you don't have problems then we can fix Aashank and Turvi's engagement on that day only. "Mumma said

" I have no problem with it. I don't want anything lavish, just normal. Because still no one knows about his identity. So you don't have to worry about anything. "he said with a smile

His smile is so charming just like my Aashu's.

He is really an angel who understands everything. And didn't demand for a lavish wedding.

My parents can afford a normal wedding like any other upper middle class people but not the billionaire thing. That's out of our league.

"So it's final then that they are getting engaged after 2 weeks." He said and others nodded

"Congratulations Turu, you are also becoming Mrs. Raichand soon." Stuti said hugging Me

I only nodded while blushing.

But I'm Turvi, how can I shut my mouth?

"so you accept Me as I'm? Means you don't expect me to change myself do you?" I asked him

And this time Stuti pinched me hard

"apna mu band nahi rakh sakti? (can't you just shut your mouth?)" she whisper yelled

"No Turvi I don't expect you to change because a person never changes completely. Yes some minimum changes can be there but not drastic ones. That's utterly crazy. And I'm a sane person." He said looking at me a little weirdly?

Or I'm thinking too much? Yeah I'm thinking too much. He accepted me as his brother's wife and what else I needed.

" Thank you bhaiya for understanding me. And accepting me. "I said and he nodded with a tight lipped smile

Ab kya hua? (Now what happened?)

" Turvi I hope you will join your course soon. Because maybe you're related to us now but the rules don't change for anyone. "He said, reminding me about my course that I have to do in the A & A academy.

" Yes I haven't forgotten I will join after the engagement only. "I told him but looked at stuti who's smile dimmed

If I leave after Engagement then we won't be able to spend time with each other before she gets married.

But I have no choice except this. I know she will understand she isn't like me who doesn't try to understand anything.

They talked more about everything and all the time I can feel someone gaze at me . I know it's Aashu but I don't have the courage to look at him.

I am feeling shy suddenly. Maybe because everything is official now.

Mumma sent me and Stuti to the kitchen to bring some sweets.

Stuti is silent because I will leave.

"Stuti yar don't be sad na. I would not have left if it wasn't important. You know that as well." I told her

"I know Turu it's important and just like my dream is becoming a chef, yours is becoming a dance choreographer. It's just I will Miss you." Stuti said with a sad smile

"No problem, I will video call you everyday and you can come to meet me there as well." I told her to cheer her up

"Yeah we can. Now come on let's take it for your husband and brother in law. I seriously can't believe that we both are getting engaged on the same day. And I will get married after 2 months. Two days back we both were single without any relationship or responsibility but now after two days our life has drastically changed. "She said and I can't help but agree with her

It took just two days to change our entire life.

My marriage was still predictable for us but her marriage is a shock.

We both went outside and I served them the sweets.

It's made by my dear Stuti.

" Stuti you made it right?" Aashu asked

"Of course she did you know very well that I can't cook much." I told him but indirectly I told his brother.

"yeah I know and I know her hand made food tastes as well." Aashu said

"you're a really great cook Stuti." He said

"Thank you sir." Stuti replied

"you know bhai she wants to be a chef and she has the potential to do so." Aashu said and his brother nodded

They left after some time and thankfully Aashu didn't get a chance to talk with me. If he did, then I'm sure he would take my good class.

Mumma again gave me an earful lecture about my stunt but papa and Stuti supported me.

Mumma is really happy that I'm getting married in a good family by good I mean a rich family.

Typical I know but can't help.

Currently I'm lying on my bed and thinking about my life ahead.

Suddenly my phone pinged with a text from an unknown number.

"Don't be so happy yet you have a long way ahead to go."

The text says

What the actual hell is this?

Who the fuck texted me this?

I called the number but it's saying it's invalid.

Bloody hell! God knows who that idiot is.

I deleted the text and placed my phone at the side to sleep peacefully.

# Chapter 23 finally Engaged

Turvi's pov

2 weeks passed away in a blur. Today is my and Stuti's engagement.

Finally I will become his official.

Stuti is also happy about her engagement. She has talked with Suryash jiju in this time span.

And I can say that my little sis is slowly falling for her husband.

Falling in love doesn't take time. It's not that you need this particular time span to fall for someone.

It takes one look to fall for someone. I did. When I first saw him my heart skipped a beat and violin music started to play. Rose petals were everywhere and a strong wind was blowing everything.

If you think this happens then no it's not the thing.

Nothing short of like this happened. But just a smile formed on my face when I first saw him when he was singing.

His mesmerising voice stole my heart a long back before his handsome face can do.

It all felt so unreal I could not understand what actually happened but slowly I realised that I had fallen for him.

And I can see the symptoms in stuti as well.

"Turu when will you get ready? Come on." Mumma screamed from downstairs

I sighed and wore my dress that is white off shoulder blouse with golden work over it along with white lehenga with golden thread square work accompanied with golden net dupatta with pearl work at the border. I paired it with green stone and white pearl jewelry.

I didn't wear earrings because I wore maang tikka and Necklace.

I did my hair and make up. And tada I'm ready to go.

I only wore a big ring and a kangan. Not many bangles.

Well I'm looking pretty good.

Lets see what stuti madam is doing.

I knocked on her door and she said to come in.

I enter her room and wow my girl is looking pretty.

She is wearing a nude purplish grey lehenga with pearl dot work over it and a heavy pearl work border. The blouse is of pearl work with three fourth sleeves with the same colour sparkling heavy dupatta and a waist band.

She has worn a lot of jewellery as per my Mumma's order.

I bet her lehenga is heavier than mine.

I like light ones, that's why I chose a light one.

Mumma chose a heavy one for me as well but I denied but my dear stuti could not deny.

She is a good girl but I'm not.

"tu kuch bolegi vi ya yuhi ghurti rahegi mujhe? (will you say something or only stare at me like a creep?) " her voice bring me back from my la la land

"oye mai ghur nahi Rahi thi mai to soch rahi thi ke mere jiju ko vagban hi bachaye kahi behosh na ho jaye vo. (oh hello I wasn't staring at you like a creep i was only thinking about my brother in law that God save him from fainting.)" I told her and she blushed

I see my brother in law has that effect on her.

" Aur mai vi yahi soch rahi hu ki Aashu kahi aj hi na shadi karle tujhse. (I'm also thinking that maybe Aashu will marry you today only.) "she said and now it's my cue to be go all red

" OK ok now stop it. We don't look like tomatoes in front of our husband's and family. "I told her and she only laughed

" Turu, have you decided what gift you will give Aashu? "she asked

Because I told her that I will give him some gift.

"yeah I have decided what to give and I will give it today only." I told her about my gift.

"what's it?" she asked but I shook my head

Soon Mumma came with some other aunty's to take us. The engagement is held in a nearby marriage hall.

Our house isn't big enough for it.

We all reached there and found both grooms were there with their family.

Aashu has come with his brother and a few friends.

They don't invite any of their relatives because his brother has cut ties with them.

It's not a big function but not a small one as well.

My eyes got locked with Aashu who is looking so handsome.

He also mouthed 'beautiful' for me

I blushed at that. Nowadays I'm blushing a lot.

I guess it affects engagement.

I look at Stuti who is also looking at her husband. They both are so lost in each other's eyes.

I elbowed her to break her eye lock because Mumma is looking at us.

"stuti come on don't look at him now. First put the ring on him and let him do the same then stare as much you want but for now Mumma is looking at us only." I told her and she nodded her head hurriedly

We both went towards them when Momma told us to.

We have to take blessings from the elder ones but no one let us say that daughters don't touch feet. They have a place in their heart , not in their feet.

And to be honest Shruti's mother in law is awesome unlike Mumma. She has no superstitious belief or any orthodox thinking...

I'm really happy for her. She will get a loving family after getting married as well.

I don't know why I'm feeling someone's gaze on me but I can't find out who is staring at me. It's making me feel uncomfortable.

"it's time for the engagement ceremony." papa said

Mumma came with our engagement rings

Both rings are given by our husbands family.

We wanted to buy it but they didn't allow us to.

Even they are taking care of half the expenses as well.

Our so called bitchy relatives got burnt in jealousy.

Those gossip aunties always praise our family.

I can sense the burn in their voice and its really give me happiness

I held the engagement ring so did stuti.

We looked at each other and together we put it on our husband's ring finger.

Everyone clapped at that and now it's time for them to make us wear it.

When Aashu made me wear it I felt a connection with him. Something more close, something more strong.

I closed my eyes when he took my hand and kissed my knuckles.

I opened my eyes and unintentionally locked my eyes with Aaryav bhai.

I couldn't look at it for a long time and I averted my eyes.

His eyes are the same as the eyes I see in my nightmares. And the same I saw in that club. But how is that possible?

Maybe I'm just over thinking. Yeah I'm.

I don't want to think about those horrible things today.

Our engagement is Finally done.

"you're looking at a breathtaking doll face. You look good in whatever you wear. I'm just wondering how will you look without them on you?" he said and I looked at him shocked

My sweet Aashu has become naughty and a pervert.

"dream on Me. Because that's what you can." I told him with a smirk

"oh believe me I do much more to you in my dreams." He said and I glared at him

"OK I will shut up now." He said

I nodded and thought to give my surprise gift to him.

# Chapter 24 boys also deserve it

Turvi's pov

I walked a bit away from everyone and vanished from there. Now it's time for his gift.

Author's pov

The lights went off and the bimar dil started to play..

Turvi comes in the spotlight..

All of them were quite surprised by this but nevertheless they didn't say anything as they understand maybe it's her gift or something.

So the dance scene below is written by Khushworld1234 thank you for writing it

**Zara zara close tu aa ke,**

She forwarded her right hand towards him with her palm open then she started to close her finger , first tiny finger then ring finger then middle finger and at last she closed her index finger making her hand into a fist. Then she stretched her fist a bit toward her heart while moving her feet backward.

She repeated this action with her left hand.

**Mera chain chura le,**

Now her both hands were either side of her face, she opened them and  did an action with her hands which denotes like she was asking him to take something from her.

**Chori-chori sab se chhupa ke,**

Than she brought her right hand up and hide her half face by it,  She did same with her left hand.

**Kahin dur le ja re... **

Than she removed her right hand and hold his hand with it and  pointed toward sky by left hand.

**Kya kahun kya haal mera,**

She hold her hand and bend backward and  sway her body from right to left.

**Ho gaya dil yaar tera, ek baar toh aa ke mil,**

He pulled her to him and she poked her finger on his heart. She interlocked her right hand with his and made a half circle from it.

**Tu aa ke mil, tu aake mil...**

She did the same with left hand then pulled him to her resulting him to collide with her petty body.

**Tera bimaar mera dil, mera jeena hua mushkil,**

She moved around him while shaking her shoulder and pointing towards him.

**Karoon kya haaye, haaye... **

He held her hand and she landed in his arms and swayed her body by bending backward.

She left him again and continued with her moves.

While dancing suddenly she came and sat on her knees in front of Aashank making everyone gasp.

"Doll face what are you doing? Get up" Aashank said immediately.

He didn't like her kneeling in front of him. It should be him who will kneel in front of her not the other way around.

But Turvi shook her head in no denying to get up from her position.

"no Aashu let me do this. I want to tell my Feelings in front of everyone like you did." Turvi said holding his hands in her own

"Mr. Aashank Raichand aka our Aashu. You remember how we meet first? You were singing some song and I was passing by that time I heard your voice and let me tell you that I fell for your voice before I even saw you.

I was just mesmerised by that. When I saw you I knew that I'm totally gone. There is no stop of my destruction. But you know I didn't want to stop this destruction.

I was scared to talk to you about my feelings for you thinking that it's one sided. And if I say it aloud then you will leave me and I will lose your friendship. 3 years, 3 freaking years I stayed silent. But when you proposed to me on our fare well I was shocked and surprised both.

And not to forget very much happiness. I felt like I'm out of the world. You make me feel like that. And today we got engaged.

So you have no escape from me still I want to ask you will Mr. Aashank Raichand hold my hand for the rest of our life?

Stay beside me in all situations no matter what happens? Promise to love me and only me until your heart stops beating?

And giving me the opportunity to carry little you or me in my womb? Will you marry me and make me the luckiest girl on this earth? "Turvi asked and pull out a bracelet and hold it

It's a lock bracelet that's key is a pendant.

Aashank has tears in his eyes by hearing her confessing her love.

All of the people who are present there are in awe by her confession.

It's really rare that any girl has gone on her knees and proposed a boy.

"you didn't answer me," Turvi said when Aashank didn't replied anything

Aashank also goes on his knees and holds her hand tightly.

"it's a yes it was always a yes for you I promise that I will never leave your hand till I'm alive. I love you so much, doll face I can't tell you how happy you made me today." aashank told her

"boys also deserve it Aashu they also deserve to feel special to get a proposal from their loved ones." Turvi said smiling and make him wear the bracelet

And herself wore the key pendant.

"now I locked you with me you can't go anywhere leaving me." Turvi said smiling

"like i will let you go." aashank said

"guys now get up we understand how much you love each other." stuti said and Turvi and Aashank realised their position

They both got up embarrassed by their PDA.

both of them blushed…

They both looked adorable together.

Everything is fine but someone isn't happy with this and why he isn't he doesn't know.

Soon it was time for the couple to dance together as it's their special day.

Turvi and Aashank were lost in their moment but Suryash and Stuti both are a little awkward

It's Stuti who is Feeling nervous with Suryash as she never came in contact with any male except her mausaji and Aashank. She wants to be normal as she has talked with him plenty of times in the past 2 weeks.

"don't be nervous wifey I won't eat you raw yet." suryash said and Stuti looked at him wide eyes

"relax I was joking. I won't do anything that you don't want me to. I can assure you. And yes be normal no need to be frightened or nervous around me." He said and Stuti bite her lips

Suryash tried to focus on something else but her actions were making It difficult for him.

He gently took her lips and saved it from her teeth assault.

" don't bite them, they are mine to bite. "He whispered and Stuti goes all red

" you're really bad, always talk to me like this. "stuti complained

" oh wifey you're so cute when you get irritated and I know now how to irritate you more. "suryash said and Stuti kept mum

She knows he will again say anything naughty if she replied.

The dance ends and they go back to their respective seats.

The party ended on a happy note as the grooms and brides took their leave from each other.

" only 2 months wifey then I will take you away with me." suryash said with a wink

"intezar Rahega, (I will be waiting)" stuti said with a smirk and that made Suryash smile

# Chapter 25 leaving House

Turvi's pov

Everything is finished now I'm laying on my bed dead tired with all the events.

I just need a good sleep and energy so I can talk about my shifting with my Mumma.

Papa knows about it and has no objections but Mumma I am sure she will create drama over it.

I sighed and closed my eyes and got lost in peaceful slumber.

Morning sun rays disturbed my peaceful sleep as I got up rubbing my eyes and yawning.

I stretched my body and got down from my bed and headed towards my washroom.

I took a long shower taking my sweet time and came out in a fluffy white towel wrapped around my head and another on my body.

Let's hunt my cupboard down and see what I can wear.

I have to wear something that covers me up so I can make Mumma happy a little bit before I drop the bomb.

I found a perfect dress that consider  A green sleeveless floral work crop top with plain pink long skirt and wore it

I left my hair open to dry them up.

I went downstairs and saw my dear stuti had already made breakfast.

Such a sweetheart she is.

"good morning everyone." I said loud enough to get everyone's attention

"good morning," they all replied

I helped Stuti to bring breakfast from the kitchen while she gave me a knowing look. She knows that I'm going to drop the bomb today.

We all sat to have our breakfast and Mumma was stuffing my and Stuti's plate with extra food.

She want us to be healthy before we get married so when our husband will fuck us we won't pass out.

Lol! She didn't say it but I know the reason.

Shh! Don't tell her she will just throw her sandal on my face.

"Mumma I have to say something." I told her

"yeah" she said

"Mumma remember I won a competition in my college?" I asked her and she nodded

"I won an opportunity to do a 2 months course in A&A academy. And I have to leave soon." I told her and she stopped eating and looked at me

"you can't be serious Turvi. You are now engaged and soon will get married. You should learn household chores and other things other than dancing. You had done enough of that. Married girls don't go around and dance. I didn't say anything until you're single but now you're engaged so behave like that you're now your fiancé's responsibility that we are keeping. "she said and that make me really angry

" Mumma what do you mean by that? I haven't done this hard work to let it go like this. I have worked from my childhood so in future I can become a choreographer and my being engaged doesn't change anything.

Nor my getting married will change anything. I don't know why I'm even talking about it. I am leaving tomorrow and that's final. And you said that now I'm engaged and responsible for my fiance right? He support Me and knows about this. "I told her loud and clear and got up without even touching my food.

I took my purse and phone and just left my house.

I didn't want it to come out like this but again she has to poke me unnecessarily.

Why doesn't she understand my love for dancing and my dreams?

I go to a nearby Caffè to have my breakfast. Why should I stay hungry because of this drama?

No one called me to know where I'm because they know that I will be here and there only.

My anger is very bad and they know it.

I sipped my coffee when my phone rang and it was a video call from Aashu.

"hello doll face." He said as I received the call

"hi," i said

"what happened to my baby? Did someone pissed you?" he asked

I know it's Stuti's work. She has told him about the fight.

"don't pretend like you are oblivious of everything" I said and he grinned like a fool

"I seriously don't know nor do I want to know. I just want to say that I'm here for you always whenever you need me." He said and I can see that he meant it

"why are you so good Aashu?" I asked him

"I'm not a good man doll face. I'm not what you think." He said and I rolled my eyes

"yeah yeah I know," I said with a mock smile

"so when are you coming?" he asked

"tomorrow. I will be there." I told him

"well I haven't left yet so I can take you with me you know." He said and I widen my eyes

"you're here?" I asked him and he nodded

"then why don't you come to meet Me?" I asked him

"I don't need to handle some work. I will pick you up tomorrow and will talk with my mother in law as well." He said and I nodded my head

"Now smile baby for me." He said and I smiled at him

"OK doll face I will talk with you later, bye And love you." He said

"love you too bye," saying I hung up

My mood is fresh now but I don't want to go to my house now.

I went to my friend's house and informed stuti about the same.

I spent some time there and left before lunch time.

I had a chicken wrap as my lunch because I'm not going to eat in my House.

I reached my house and ignored Mumma like she is invisible.

I and Stuti both packed my luggage that I will be taking.

I have packed some salwar suits as well because Stuti insisted.

And she kept a few sarees as well god just killed me.

"babe I don't know how to drape it remember?" I told her

"I will send you a tutorial later." was her answer

Once done we both talked about everything yet nothing.

I will miss her very much but I have to go.

At night time papa came with my dinner and spent time with me.

We talked and he asked me to not be angry with Mumma. Because it's the way she is.

I only nodded my head on that.

I slept early and got up early as well.

Time to get ready and leave.

They don't know that I'm going to stay with Aashu and his brother.

I have told stuti only who won't snitch on me. I know that.

I got ready in a pink cold shoulder full sleeves top with grey flared ruffle skirt

And now I'm good to go.

I went downstairs and ate my breakfast silently.

I hugged papa and Stuti.

Neither me or Mumma made any move to hug each other.

Fine by me I don't need to hug her. Anyways she is waiting for me to leave after getting married so I'm making it more easy for her.

I thought and left from there to go to my new home or my new cage.

# Chapter 26 new home

Turvi's pov

"don't be sad doll face, everything will be fine." Aashu told me to console me

I'm really feeling weird after leaving my home.

Most importantly I didn't want to leave like that but now it's done I can't undo it.

"I am fine," I said and he give me a look

"I'm really fine. You're with me then why will I be sad?" I asked him and he shook his head

"you know how to play with words and use them correctly." He said and I smirked

We reached his home and soon to be mine home as well.

"Welcome to your Palace would be Mrs. Raichand." Aashu said as I looked at the house no correction for this Palace-like mansion in pure awe.

It's so awesome and beautiful. I can't believe that he lived here and after staying here he managed in his dorm room.

" you have a beautiful mansion. "I told him

" correction we do. We own it along with my brother obviously. " He said

" Does your brother also stay here? "I asked the dumbest question

" obviously he does. "He said chuckling

God! way to embarrass yourself on your first day.

I just hope I won't make a fool of myself in front of his brother.

We both enter the house and oh boy the outside is nothing in front of inside.

I'm just speechless no doubt his brother thought I'm a gold digger because girls will kill each other for being here.

"where is your brother?" I asked him

"um he is gone for some work he won't come for a few days means we have our sweet time together. You know what I mean." He said with a teasing smirk

"yeah it means I can concentrate on my work and you can do it on your own. No funny business until we get married." I told him and he made a fake hurt expression

Nautanki kahi ka.. (drama king)

"ohk come with me I will show you your room that is in the middle floor between mine and bhai's floor." He said and I give him a confused look

What did he mean by floor?

"Oh I forgot to tell you we have our own floors. We have 4 rooms with office and other stuff on our floor and yes don't go on bhai's floor he doesn't like intruders." He warned me in a serious tone

I nodded my head in yes I don't plan to go there as well.

He took near an elevator. I mean really? An elevator?

"Be used to its doll face, that's how we live." He said without even looking at my face

He knows my reaction will be something like this only.

We reached the floor where I will be staying and showed me my room and god it's like I'm in some princess movie.

My room is decorated in my taste.

" did you liked it?" he asked me

"I loved it," I said and hugged him

"OK then you take a rest and get fresh. Your luggage will be here any moment. And if you need anything else then just press the button there an attendant will come up here to help you out.

You have a mini fridge where fruits, chocolate and snacks are present. That's the closet and that's your washroom.

And you have attached a spare room for your dance practice. "He finished showing me everything

" from how long you were planning everything? " I asked him and he scratches his neck

" um yesterday only. You know money does all the work for us." He said and I rolled my eyes

" You rich people have no other work I see. Only using money to do work. By the way do you even know anything other than wasting your brother's money?" I asked him and his face harden

" You have no idea about my hard work doll face. So you better not comment on that. I own half of everything my brother had and I have my own made property as well. "He said in all serious tone

OK I guess he didn't like my taunting about his work and status. Typical Male ego I see.

" OK ok no need to be hiper I got it that you had a big part here. "I told him

" now I will take my leave as I have work to do. Bye doll face will meet you in a few hours. "He said and kissed my forehead

My luggage also came as someone dropped it here.

" Asim sends Sanya to settle her closet and make sure she doesn't face any kind of problems. She is my fiance and mistress of this house you better not get her angry or disappointed because when she gets disappointed I get disappointed and you know well what I do when I'm disappointed right? "he asked that man Asim who is looking at floor like there is some movie playing

And let me tell you I don't know this man who said this at all. My Aashu isn't like this. He doesn't use this tone.

He behaved completely differently from what he did in my presence.

"Yes sir I know and nothing will be wrong I assure you. I will not let man get any chance to be disappointed or angry." that man said mononotely without any emotions and Aashu nodded

He is like he is in the military not in a house.

"now go," Aashu said and that man left

"Aashu, that's not a way to talk with anyone. He is also a human like you and me." I told him because I didn't liked it at all

"doll face I behave sweetly with you and Stuti that doesn't mean I'm like that with everyone. This is my other side that is for these people. I have to be strict to take everything under control. If you don't like me this way I wonder what you will do when you see bhai. He is another level arrogant jerk and an A grade asshole according to your theory. "He said with a smile and caressed my cheeks

This man is more than what I thought he was.

" you will be habitual with time.. Don't stress about this. I will be the same Aashu whom you love. Now I have to go. Soon Sanya will come here and set your closet. Bye," he said and left me there

What was that? God he became totally different from what he is.

Maybe all rich people are like that. I shouldn't think about it much unless he started showing his arrogant attitude towards me.

I decided to take shower as I'm feeling tired.

Soon a girl came inside. She was maybe in her mid twenties.

"mam I'm Sanya I came here to set your closet." she said in a monotone voice like a robot

What's this people and their robotic talks?

"hey Sanya first don't call me mam because surely I'm the younger one here. And yes you can set it." I told her with a smile

"I'm sorry but I can't call you anything else then mam none of our masters will appreciate that." she replied and started her work with concentration.

# Chapter 27 Birthday Surprise

Turvi's pov

It's been 1 week that I'm staying with Aashu in his and soon to be my house.

His brother hasn't come back yet and maybe he won't be back anytime soon. Because when I asked about him Aashu said he won't come back now.

This 1 week has passed like a wind. I didn't get the chance to think where it went.

I haven't talked with Mumma either.

We both have ego issues so yeah no one is less than others.

Currently I'm doing jogging outside of the mansion

This place is so big that anyone can get lost here I did on my 2nd day of stay.

It's Sanya who showed me the mansion properly so I won't get lost here.

Talking about Sanya she is like my shadow.

She does everything I ask and always is ready for my orders.

I feel like some princess my fiancé is treating me like one.

Talking about him he has shown me lots of love these days.

Sweet good morning notes, teasing and cheesy dialogues and those late night movies.

I have nothing to do here. I'm simply sitting idle.

Wake up and find Sanya on your service.

Take a bath, eat , get ready, go to the academy , take training and come back, eat , sleep and repeat.

In the middle I sometimes practice dance but if not then I'm only sleeping.

At this rate I will become a balloon.

Aashu will be really happy if I become a balloon because he won't have to be insecure anymore.

His words not mine

Like I have my eyes for someone else.

Though I'm a dancer and won't lose shape , sitting constantly and not doing anything can change my body.

"doll face!" Aashu called my name and I stopped

"yeah," I replied

"aren't you done with your running?" he asked impatiently and I know the reason

"yeah I'm, wait I will be joining you." I told him and found him gawking at me

As I'm only wearing a black sports bra and tights bottom for jogging.

"eyes up here pretty boy." I told him and he smirked showing me his engagement ring

"I have the licence to stare at you doll face and once I tie the mangalsutra on your neck I will get the licence of doing anything I want to as well" he said bluntly

In this one week I noticed a few things.

First he is very blunt and when I say I mean it.

Secondly he behaves very strictly or I say rudely with his mansion staff.

I don't like it to be honest but I don't say anything to him because it's the way he has been this time so I can't change everything at once.

Maybe in future I will be able to change him.

"you know what? You have become totally shameless. And who said that tying the mangalsutra gives you rights? If you tried to do anything without my will then be ready to be kicked in your family jewels and lose the ability to make babies and believe me I love kids and want two for myself. So don't provoke me. "I told him with a smirk and he raised his hand in surrender

I shook my head and went inside my room to bathe and get ready.

I came out wearing a towel around my body and walked in my closet. Oh yeah I have a walk in the closet.

I chose to wear white off shoulder crop top with black plate skirt.

And I'm ready to go. I had left my hair open because it was wet.

I went downstairs for breakfast and saw my poor fiance was sulking alone.

Aww!

"hi," I said and he look at me

"doll face will you just do me a favour?" he asked

"yeah," I said sitting beside him

"Please wear clothes that cover you around bhai. Please he doesn't stay here for long." He said with pleading eyes

I nodded my head in understanding.

"by the way do you have any plans for tonight?" he asked me

"no I don't why? Do you have any?" I asked him knowing well the reason of his question

"oh no I don't have any." He said and silently eat his breakfast

Now you all will think that why is he sulking right?

So today is his birthday and I haven't wished him yet. I'm pretending like I don't remember his birthday.

That's why he is sulking.

He doesn't know that I have planned something for him.

He deserves a surprise for being teased like this.

"doll face do you remember what day today is?" he asked and I nodded my head and he smiled brightly

"Yeah today is Sunday means I have no classes." I told him and his smile dropped

"OK, well I have work and I won't be home today. I will be back at night only. Bye and take care" saying he left from there without having breakfast completely

This boy ugh! Worse than a kid

"well if someone is behaving like a kid that's you my dear." my bitch of a subconscious said

And we'll that's true but I want to surprise him so it's ok

But today is Sunday. What work did he have today?

Maybe he got angry that I forgot his birthday and left from here

I sighed and ate very little because I can't eat after I know he hasn't eaten as well.

I went to my room and asked Sanya to help me with the decoration items.

She said that she will do the work but I ordered her to not do so.

These people only listen to your order, not requests.

And with her help I did the decoration in the garden area.

They have a Really beautiful garden filled with roses and jasmine's.

Both are my favourite.

Once done I decided to sleep as I don't have any work.

I had asked Sanya if she knew how to drape a saree and she said yes.

Though stuti has sent me the tutorial how to drape it but today I can't take chances with it.

She wished him and told me that he was complaining about how I forgot about his birthday.

She only consoles him because she can't tell the truth.

I had already arranged everything and now I can finally sleep.

My alarm clock rang reminding me that I have to get up now.

I got up and washed my face.

I wore my blouse and underskirt and called Sanya.

Who helped me to drape the saree correctly.

It's a very nice and simple dark purple chiffon saree with pearl work on it and I paired it with a black sleeveless and backless blouse.

She also helps me to get ready and my overall look is not bad. She had made a bun of my hair and I only wore long earrings as jewellery.

It's 8 pm now and Aashu must be here soon.

I texted him to come soon and meet me in the garden area because I want to sit with him there. And he send an ok.

I walked there and saw everything was ready.

I set the candles on the cake and check everything once again.

"where are you?" I texted him

And heard footsteps means he is here.

I saw his text and he said that he is here only and coming.

Great now time to surprise him.

I asked Sanya to turn off the lights in this area and she made everything dark.

No one else is allowed here except her because she is helping me.

And that's when I saw him walking towards this area.

He stopped in a distance from me probably thinking about this darkness.

Before he can do anything I go towards him and hug him tightly.

"Happy birthday Aashu. Many many happy returns of the day. I am sorry that I pretended that I forgot your birthday. I love you" I said and I closed my eyes and it's time for the lights to lit and I did what I was thinking to give him as his gift I placed my lips on his.

# Chapter 28 the Unfortunate kiss

Turvi's pov

As soon I pressed my lips on his he jerked me away like my touch burned him.

What the hell? Isn't he the one always talking dirty and now behaving like this?

Like he didn't want me near him. Before he always finds ways to touch me or give me hints that he wants to kiss me but it's me who always stops and now when I do it on my own he is rejecting Me.

I was about to scream at him for his unacceptable behaviour when I heard Aashu's voice from distant

"what are you both doing here together?"

The lights go on and I widen my eyes seeing the scene in front of me.

I never ever imagined this in my nightmares as well. I can't believe my eyes or I just want to believe it. I want it to be fake.

In front of me is standing his brother, which means my future brother in law. Aashu is standing in front of us.

Means I kissed him instead of Aashu oh god! What the fuck I did. How could I?

He had a shocked and disgusted expression on his face and I know my is none less than that.

"we are here to surprise you little brother." He said to Aashu

"play along" he mouthed and I nodded my head immediately

I don't want him to know this not now.

"Yes it's a surprise for you. Happy birthday Aashu." I said and hugged him tightly

I want to just wash my lips and cry my heart out but apparently I can't do that now.

I just can't ruin everything. I can't make him upset on his birthday.

It's my fault I should have let see before kissing him.

What must be he thinking about me? What kind of slut I'm?

"bhai you weren't coming back anytime soon then how come you're here?" Aashu asked what I want to ask him

"today is my only family member and brother's birthday. Did I ever miss your birthday that I will now? How can you even think about it?" he asked sounding hurt

"no bhai I didn't mean it." Aashu left me and go towards his brother

How good an actor is he? His voice doesn't hold any kind of affect of our kiss.

Well it was just a peck not a proper kiss but still.

Agghh! I'm such an idiot I'm the biggest fool on this earth.

Please mother earth open up and swallow me whole.

"but I must say you got a very caring fiance who did a great job." He said and I looked away

I just can't look at him not after what ever happened.

"Yes bhai. That's the truth. I'm really lucky to have my doll face with me." He said with love in his eyes

And what I did? I fucking kissed his brother.

"you didn't do it intentionally so don't drag it. It was a mistake to treat it as one." my brain said

And I really want to agree with her.

"so it means you both were just acting to give me surprise god don't do that ever. It really sucks." Aashu whined

Yeah it's a reminder I won't plan any surprises ever or even if I did I will confirm who the person is in front of me.

"I'm sorry but now let's cut the cake." I told him and he nodded

I can feel his brothers gaze on me but I chose to pretend oblivious of it.

We both sang for him as Aashu cut the cake and took two pieces of it.

He holds each in one hand and feeds us both together.

It only shows how important we both are in his life.

"now give me gifts." He said like a 5 year old

"here you go with your gift." his brother said and hand him some keys

"it's the keys of our farmhouse that you love and a brand new Lamborghini" he replied and Aashu grinned like a child who got his favorite toffy

"and you what will you give me?" he asked making my heart sink

I already gave your gift to someone else.

"what? I arranged everything for you even wore a saree when you know how much I despise it and I'm giving myself to you as well by marrying you what more you need?" I asked him trying my best to be appear normal

"that's not fair." He whined

"deal with it" I told him

After this both brothers chatted for some time.

I stayed silent mostly whenever I'm asked something and I replied with a smile.

"doll face did anything happen?" he asked making me panic

"no nothing happened. What will happen." I told him

"then why are you looking dull?" he asked me

"Oh actually I did the preparations na as I wanted to do everything on my own so I'm feeling tired nothing else." I lied smoothly

"Why do you work yourself up with a doll face? I told you so many times to not do anything." He said and shook his head

"it's her way to show her love don't scold her for that." his brother said

"I know bhai but she just doesn't listen to me. Now enough of everything, have your dinner and take a rest . It's already 10 pm." He said and I nodded

We all three go into our rooms to change our clothes before eating.

I wear a White sleeveless chicken work kurta with a white chicken work straight pant.

I hadn't cried because he will catch me if I cry.

We had our dinner and I retreated to my room silently.

I let my tears fall down as I am now alone.

I stuff my face in my pillow though my room is soundproof.

"why god why? Why with me only?" I asked to god

Suddenly someone knocked on my door.

Now who came? Aashu?

I quickly wipe my tears and hold my sobs.

He will go away if he doesn't get a response thinking that I'm sleeping.

"Turvi open the door, it's me Aaryav." He said and I sat on my bed

Now what he wants from me?

I wipe my tears and open the door. Though my face is screaming that I was crying but I care less until it's not Aashu.

"may I come in?" he asked and I left the door

"Turvi I know it was a mistake. You thought Me as Aashank and honestly I was too shocked to react to anything. It's a mistake so don't worry about it and don't cry. I don't want my brother to know this.

He won't say anything but he will be hurt that I took something that has meant to him. He is a sensitive person; he doesn't take this kind of thing casually. And it wasn't even a kiss so don't worry. "He said everything with a cold voice

I didn't understand if he was consoling me or threatening me?

" I can't hide it from him. He deserves to know the truth that I kissed his brother thinking it's him. If I didn't tell him then it's cheating and I can't cheat on him." I told him clearly

Tomorrow morning I will do the first thing if I tell him about it.

" do you want me to tell him that you were trying to seduce me before he came? "he said and I looked at him wide eyes

What the fuck he meant by this

" what are you saying? I didn't do anything like that. "I said immediately

" I know that and you know it. But he doesn't, don't forget that I'm his brother. And he will believe my words. I don't have any problem with you Turvi though you're not what I approve of.

But my brother loves that's the reason I accepted you don't make me play dirty. I don't want him to be hurt. And if to save him I have to make you the culprit I won't hesitate to do so. "He said and I just lost my mind

" oh yes your brother is the same brother who was happily ready to lie on your face about my nature so you won't reject me.

He didn't think once before cheating you. And you're bragging about being his brother. And you're talking about hurt right?

If we didn't tell him now and In future If he got to know this then he will be more hurt and will think that I cheated on him. And that's the last thing I want to happen.

And about making me bad, try it Mr. Raichand. I bet your brother will choose me over you. Because he loves me the way I do. And our love is blind.

He trusts me. He knows what my character is and what kind of girl I'm. Don't forget that I loved him as an orphan middle class boy who only has his brother not the billionaire's brother or heir of property.

So you can't blame me for being a gold digger because that's absolutely baseless I told you this before only that if you don't approve our relationship I will cut my ties with him because you're like his patent

and I really don't want to break you both apart but now you're doing the same thing breaking us and I won't tolerate that.

I would have never said this if you haven't challenged me like that. You're older than me and I never disrespect elders without any reason. And I won't change my decision no matter what.

I will tell Aashu the truth tomorrow only. "I said with a determined look

" What will you tell me, Doll face? " Aashu asked me to freeze in my place.

# Chapter 29 over possessive

Turvi's pov

" What will you tell me, Doll face? " Aashu asked me making me freeze in my place.

I looked at Aashu who was standing at the door.

His brother has his ever so calm and cold expression on his face.

Like he isn't bothered about it at all.

And why should he be bothered? He only wants to damage everything.

"What happened to you doll face? What you wanted to tell me?" he asked me

"actually Aashu…" "Actually she is feeling a bit sad as she is away from her sister. She was telling me that she never parted away from her so yeah she wanted to meet her so she wanted to tell you that either you bring her or take her to meet her sister." his brother cut me off in middle

Why doesn't this man want me to spill the truth?

" Ohh! Yeah that's true that they never stayed away even stuti was saying that she missed her a lot. I will do one thing. I will bring her here so you both can spend time together and she will be married soon as well." Aashu said with a smile

"but bhai what were you doing here at this time?" he asked his brother

Great now Answer him Mr. I do everything correct

"Actually I came here to thank her. You see she made my brother happy by coming into his life so yeah just a little chat. By the way Brother why did you burned your new clothes?" he asked Aashu

Such a liar he is. I need to stay the fuck away from him.

"Oh that's because asim put my clothes in your closet first then he brings them back knowing it's mine. You know bhai I don't like used things. I want and love my things to be exclusively mine.

I'm possessive about my things you know that don't you? And what I don't get exclusively I destroy it completely because no one can have my things in any way. "Aashu said all seriously and I saw his brother smirking and giving me look saying

" I told you so "

I gulped audibly hearing that.

" I think I should go now. I need rest. I'm tired. Good night to both of you. Have a great night. "He said and we both mumbled a good night

Once he left Aashu locked the door he came towards me and hugged me tightly.

" Thank you so much doll face for doing everything. Bhai looks impressed by you. He never shows his emotions like this. You must have done something really good.

And why didn't you tell me earlier that you're missing Stuti? I would have done something na. Anyways I was planning to bring her here in a few days but now as you have asked me I will make sure she comes here tomorrow only. "He said still hugging me

" Aashu will you answer my one question honestly? "I asked him

He broke the hug and looked at me with a frown.

" when did I ever….. "He was about to say when did he lied but stopped when I give him a look

" OK I got that. Yeah ask I will answer. "He said

" umm what would be your reaction if you get to know that my first kiss isn't you but someone else? "I asked him and his eyes darken

He held my waist tightly and pulled me towards him making me wince in pain.

He is hurting me now.

" I will kill that person who dared to take what's mine. I am a very possessive man, Doll face and I don't share unless it's a part of my facade. Whatever I says I mean it." He said and I looked at him with horror

What would he do if he got to know about my peck with his brother?

" hey doll face, no need to be afraid. I know that you haven't got your first kiss because it's mine to take after our marriage on our wedding night. But tell me one thing why this sudden question?" he asked

I can't tell him the truth he will go mad and then both brothers will become enemies all because of me.

Maybe his brother doesn't want him to know because of this only?

He knows his brother better than me.

" hey what are you thinking? Did you kissed anyone Turvi?" he asked and I didn't missed that he used my name not doll face

"no not at all. Just thought to ask you. As you just burned your new clothes because it was in your brother's closet he maybe hasn't even worn them but still you did so I'm just asking what would be your reaction." I lied to him

I can't take any risk.

" oh, yeah I am like that only. You will get to know me more as you spend time with me. I will show you my every side slowly slowly layer by layer. Now I think you should sleep and you must be tired. "He said and kissed my forehead lovingly

" good night, "I said

" good night, "he replied and left

I locked the door and laid on my bed.

God this both brothers are something.

Both are crazy.

Maybe Aashu is one of those rich spoilt brats and his brother the typical egoistic CEO.

Aashu has shades that I also know it's not all of him that he shows.

I have to be careful and try to not poke any of the brothers.

"Yeah, like you didn't just argue with his elder brother." my mind mocked

"shut up it was an accident in their heat of the moment I said those things." I told her

I closed my eyes to sleep and thankfully I didn't have to fight to sleep.

Next morning I got up and did my routine.

I wore a Quarter sleeves red ankle length forck suit with stone work over upper body

as Aashu told me before to wear something that cover me at least for starting days in front of his brother.

I went downstairs and found both brothers on the dining table.

"good morning Doll face." Aashu greeted me

"good morning." I replied

"good morning Turvi hope you slept well" his brother asked

"Yes I slept well thank you for asking Bhaiya." I told him with a forced smile

I sat opposite of Aashu as his brother was sitting on the head chair.

Sanya came and served us our breakfast.

She gives me my special breakfast that Is according to my new diet chart.

" Doll face I have some gift for you. Do you want it now or later?" Aashu asked me

"um whenever you feel like giving me." I told him

"OK then, here take it." He said and hand me a box

"When did you buyed it?" I asked him

"Well, perks of being a billionaire you see." He said and I rolled my eyes

I opened the box and the gift made me smile immediately.

# Chapter 30 meeting Stuti

Turvi's pov

I can't believe my eyes what he got me as gifts.

"oh my goodness Aashu! You got me my favourite things. A butterfly ankle chain, a butterfly ring, a butterfly pendant along with butterfly studs, another set of pendants and studs, a ring chain bracelet with Butterfly sarees. God you just made me super happy. Thank you so much for it." I said and send him flying kiss

He just give Me my most favourite things.

I am kind of obsessed with butterflies and their accessories.

I like it very much but Mom doesn't allow me to wear it saying that if I use too many butterfly things then either I will be caged or get crushed like a butterfly.

Suddenly I heard someone clearing their throat and no need to guess it's my oh so arrogant jerk asshole Brother in law.

Fuck his age and relationship. I will curse him as much I want.

Respect isn't given because you're elder or something respect is earned and this man over here hasn't done anything to earn it but did enough to degrade himself in front of me.

"I knew that you will like it and yes now your mother can't say anything about it because it's given by me as your fiancé. And it's a return gift for giving Me a surprise party." Aashu said and I smiled brightly

"Very bad brother, you forgot your bhai before your marriage. What will happen to me after your marriage? I'm an old man who needs his brother for his future days." my brother in law said in a fake hurt tone

"bhai you got everything you desired. There isn't a thing that you want but didn't get. there is nothing that I could give you or something. It's you who always gives me what I want." Aashu replied

"Are you sure you have nothing to give Me?" he asked and why did I feel he was looking at Me?

I looked at him and found both brothers staring at Me.

"what?" I asked both

"nothing. You're too concentrated on your gift box." Aashu said

"Yes bhai I'm positive I have nothing to give you." Aashu replied

"my bad, but yes you're correct I get what I desire there isn't a thing that I desired but didn't get." my brother in law said and I rolled my eyes mentally

Both brothers are too full of themselves.

"yeah. Doll face you make sure that Sanya makes Stuti's room ready. You're going to be the mistress of this house soon so yes get habitual of it." Aashu said and I said what I should not

"um I will do it no worries but why will I be the mistress of this house? It should be your bhabhi (Sister in law) isn't it?" I asked

"yeah but as you know bhai isn't married and neither I think he will marry anyone because he doesn't find his perfect life partner in any girl. So for now you're the mistress." Aashu said and I looked at his brother who looked like he will burn me alive with his gaze only

" OK, "I said and ate my breakfast

After breakfast they both left for their work and I left behind in the Mansion.

I asked Sanya to make the next door room ready from mine. I want Stuti to be at my side.

I am honestly happy that my brother in law did some good work by lying about it.

In the afternoon , Stuti came here and I just ran and hugged her tightly.

"I missed you very much." I told her

"I missed you too Turu. Though I'm surprised that you got time to miss me. I mean you're living with your Fiancé so I thought you would be busy with some stuff and all." she said with a sly smirk

"Stuti babe you know what I won't say anything to you now just let your wedding night pass then I will take revenge because revenge is better served cold." I told her with a smirk

"OK I will just shut my mouth. Now tell me how is everything here? You're really fine right?" she asked me

"I will tell you everything first you go and settle in your room and get dressed in comfortable clothes. Then we'll talk." I told her

"OK show me the way." she said and I nodded

"Sanya sent her luggage in her room and brought some refreshments." I told sanya who nodded her head silently

"wow already mistress mode on I see. Not bad Turu." stuti teased and I just rolled my eyes

I showed her room to her and she was in awe just like me.

"it's beautiful." she said

"it is" I replied

"By the way, your in-laws house is also lavish. I have seen the pictures and you got a tour itself." I told her

"yeah," she said and blushed..

4 days back my jiju (brother in law - Suryash) took her to his home where his parents stay and it is lavish. And he is also taking transfer only for stuti so stuti won't have to leave her home town again.

How sweet of him isn't it?

"ok now go and get ready." I told her and she go inside washroom with her clothes

She came out after 15 minutes and Sanya also came with snacks.

"So now tell me, how are you really doing?" she asked me after I locked the door.

Can't afford anyone over hearing our conversation.

"honestly telling this Palace is too much for me. I'm not habitual of these things. You can't believe Aashu's behaviour here. He is just like those typical billionaires. I have ignored his behaviour because it's what he is. He can't change suddenly. And yes his behaviour with Me is the same or I say he has become more romantic.

And about his brother he is an absolute jerk. He is just too narcissistic. I just hate him but guess what I have to bear him for Aashu. "I told her

" OK I got everything but what about his brother? Is he back? But he wasn't till yesterday? "she asked and I took a deep breath and told her what happened

She had an open mouth looking really funny but this thing had nothing funny.

" oh god Turu. It's so embarrassing. And I think you should listen to what your brother in law is saying. I mean he knows Aashu from his birth. He has raised him practically so yes he knows him better than anyone else. And if he is saying no then don't "stuti said

" I know yar and after talking with Aashu I got why he asked me to hide it. Aashu is really possessive about his things. And I don't want any problems between us and it wasn't anything more then a peck so it's not cheating or something. "I told her

" Yes it's not cheating. So calm down and if in future you want to tell him then do it at the right moment. But in all the drama one thing happened good we both got to stay together for a few days. "she said and I nodded

" Now let's eat something. I'm feeling hungry though I had my lunch. "she said

" How is Mumma? "I asked her

" she is still stuck on her point. Nothing changed. "she replied

" Fine with me. Just a few months more once you get married then I will also get married and leave her to be alone and happy. "I said and wiped the lonely tear that escaped

" don't think like that Turu. She loves you but it's just she is a bit ok a lot orthodox. But she loves you very much. And you love her as well. So don't think this rubbish and be happy. "she said and I nodded

# Chapter 31 argument and apology

Turvi's pov

After chatting with Stuti for sometime l let her take some rest. Or I say give privacy as her fiance has called her.

I don't want to be a third wheel in their conversation.

I had no work to do here so I thought why not just practice some dance moves.

I haven't even gone to the academy today as well.

I changed my clothes and on the music system.

Taking a deep breath I let the music flow and dance with it.

Kept practicing for 2 hours straight and now I'm tired as hell.

It's evening time and my stomach wants some food.

Let's bother my sweet sister.

"hello dear sister." I said as I enter in her room as her door is open

She is laying on the bed scrolling her phone.

"hey," she said and sat up

"So I was thinking why don't you make some snacks for us? Actually I'm missing your food." I told her

"Tune kya mujhe tere iiye khana banane ke liye bulaya hai? (have you call me to cook for you?)" she asked me narrowing her eyes

"What if I say yes?" I said smirking

"then I will say forget I'm not even lifting a spoon here." she replied back

"come on yar don't be a meanie. After marriage I won't be able to eat your hand made food. Hell I don't even know when we will meet. So please!" I said giving her my best puppy eyes

"hmm true. Anyways I was about to ask you that only you know I can't stay without cooking something I love it very much." She replied making me smile

"so what do you want to eat?" she asked me

"um what about pakoras?" I asked her

"what about your diet?" she asked

"did I ever follow one?" I asked her back and she shook her head

We both went downstairs and found Aashu coming back.

"hello Aashu," Stuti said

"hey stuti," he said and they both hugged each other

"it's good to see you here. Doll face was missing you." He said

"haw! means only she was missing me not you? I'm hurt you know." she said dramatically

I like this quality in her because she changed according to people and situations.

Mature, funny, dirty, immature, friendly, angry and crazy.

One girl with many shades.

"I didn't say that. You're my friend as well and my only sister in law how can I forget you? After all Sali to adhi ghar wali hoti hai (sister in law is half wife)" he joked

"OK people here I'm dying to eat something so finish your chit chat later." I told them

"something is burning isn't it?" Aashu asked

"Yes yes I can smell it." stuti replied

"really gonna play this game with me?" I asked them

"ok sorry. And why didn't you eat? Where is Sanya?" Aashu started his rapid fire round again

"calm down. I went to eat something made by stuti that's why we were going to the kitchen. When you came." I told him

"OK that's great. I can again have something made by you. Go don't waste time I will be back after changing." He said and we laughed

I showed her heaven I mean kitchen.

She is really happy to cook here because this is surely a dream kitchen.

She made many kinds of pakora (fritters) like potato, onion, chilly, chicken, paneer and baby corn.

Yeah it's a feast you can say.

"The smell is making me hungry more." I told her

"you're always hungry." she taunted

We took the platters though Sanya was trying to help but we didn't let her. That girl really needs to chill. It's like she is on some mission all the time.

When we came out we saw Mr. Raichand is also here.

Yeah Mr. Raichand bhai doesn't suit him.

"hello Mr. Raichand, it's good to see you." stuti greeted ever so politely

"hello to you Stuti, hope you're enjoying here. And please skip calling me Mr. Raichand it made me sound like I'm some 60 year old" He also said politely?

Yeah he did. Well that's good I seriously don't want stuti to feel his arrogant behaviour.

" OK then I can call you Bhai because you're definitely older than me. And I made snacks. Why don't you join us? Aashank will be here as well." she said

"Wait, why did you cook? Where is the staff? Asim Sanya?" he called loudly

Here we go again.

"Yes sir." they came running immediately like they were expecting it

"what were you doing? Our guest has to cook in your presence then for what I'm paying you all?" he asked or I say yelled at them

"can you keep your tone down and you both go I will handle him." I told them boldly

I'm playing the bold game here.

"go," I said as they were still rooted to their place

"So the thing is they did what they were supposed to do. Listening to my order. And I order them to not do anything. I wanted to have food made by my sister and I did that. No need to make it a big issue.

And they are also human beings so try to treat them like that. I'm watching your and your brothers behavior from the day I came. It's not acceptable. Sorry to offend you but I feel that you are feeling like you're their god not their employer. So sorry to break your illusion. You're no god so don't try to behave like one. "I told him in one go and looked all three of them looking at me with pure shock

They didn't expect this from me I guess. Well I didn't expect this from myself as well.

I felt a tight hold on my hand and found Stuti glaring at Me.

Aashu has a similar kind of expression on his face.

Well I guess I said a little too much.

"You have a very sharp tongue, Turvi , do you know that? And I really don't like sharp tongue girls. You're going to be married to my brother and you're family now so I won't do anything about it.

But refrain yourself from using this kind of tone in the future. And for your information I am their God. And I can treat them the way I prefer. So yes keep this on your mind. "Mr. Raichand said with arrogance dripping from his tone

" it's nice to meet you Stuti. We will meet at dinner time. Have a great evening. "He said with a smile and left for his room

" what the fuck was that Turvi? "Aashu asked in an angry tone

" I said the truth. You can't handle it, that's your problem not mine. And yes don't use your this tone on Me. It won't be good to remember that. "I warned him

" Ok I'm not angry, I'm just telling you that please don't use this tone on him. He isn't one of them to take his insult silently. Now your outburst will cost someone else his or her job. "He said calmly

"he won't take it out on someone else now will he?" I asked him

"what do you think Turvi?" he asked

Fuck! I can't let anyone get fired because of me.

Without thinking much I ran towards his room ignoring Aashu and Stuti who were calling my name.

I knocked on his room and it's the first time that I'm here. On his floor. After debating like 5 minutes

" come in, "he barked loudly

I entered his room and honestly I had wide eyes.

His room is all black everything here is black.

And he is standing there without his clothes in a towel.

" I'm sorry I should not have said those things to you and I will refrain myself from doing this in future so don't fire anyone because of me." I blabbered turning my back

"apology is not accepted. We apologise when we realise our fault not because of something else. So apologies when you accept it's your fault." He said arrogantly

Fucking Male chauvinist arrogant pig.

"I'm sorry for my mistake. Please accept my apology. I accept my mistakes as well." I said cursing him more in my mind

"OK apology accepted. Now you may leave." He said and I left nodding my head

This man oh god how will I stay with him after my marriage?

I have to avoid this man at any cost til the time I can.

I thought and went downstairs.

# Chapter 32 the ball

Turvi's pov

I go downstairs and found both of them looking at me with a worried expression

They should after all I came from devil's hell.

"what happened? What did you do now?" Aashu asked me impatiently

"I apologise to him for nothing else." I said shrugging off my shoulders

"and what did he said?" he asked

"he said I'm forgiven. You know what I will stay the fuck away from your brother he is ugh! Actually you were right about him. I should have listened to you." I told him

He had already warned me about it beforehand only and after yesterday's incident I should not have done it.

Why can't I just shut my mouth?

" if he said you're forgiven then it's fine. But doll face please don't even do this thing ever again in future." He said and I nodded

*Now let's eat. I don't want her hard work to go to waste and someone will give bhai his snacks in his room only. "He said and I sat down

Though I don't have any appetite anymore, I can't let her hard work get wasted as Aashu said.

I had my snacks and went back to my room. I just want to stay alone right now.

Stuti is also in her room and Aashu god knows what he is doing.

If my life is going to be like this after marriage then god save me.

I laid down on my bed and decided to sleep for sometime. Sleeping is the best thing to do when you're sad or angry.

"Turu get up and have your dinner." I heard stuti saying and waking me up but I'm not in a mood to wake up

"go away let me sleep" I said

"lazy ass, get up or I'm not going to save the chocolate ice cream Aashu bought." She said and I got up immediately

Chocolate Is love and ice cream is eternal love and when these both meet then an explosion of love happens.

"I knew it will work" she muttered and I smiled Sheepishly

I go inside my washroom and wash my face and wipe it with a towel.

I combed my hair a bit so I looked presentable.

We both go downstairs and I find both brothers talking about something and they stopped immediately when they saw us

What are they talking about anyways?

We both sat on our seats and I didn't look at him.

"Doll face, Stuti I have something to tell." Aashu said

"Yes.." stuti replied

"um the day after tomorrow we have a party um kind of ball thing and the theme is Victorian. So you have to be ready in that clothes and jewellery." He said

"OK so why are you telling me?" Stuti asked clearly confused

"because you are also a genius. You're my date and doll face is bhai's." He said and I literally choked on my food

He can't be serious now.

"hey what happened?" stuti asked passing me water

I drink it and calm down a bit.

"nothing I got choked on something I'm fine." I told her

"but I think I should not go and what about you and your hidden identity thing?" stuti said

"Actually the threat is no more so yeah I'm free to give my introduction to everyone. And you're coming. Don't worry your fiancé won't mind and even if he does then I will talk to him. I'm your brother in law and before that I'm your friend. So I have every right to take you to a party. "Aashu said

And here I was planning to avoid him just great but I also understand why he did it.

Stuti won't be comfortable with him but with Aashu.

And I have to bear this arrogant ass. Just great!

" So what about the clothes? "I asked

" that will be taken care of " Mr. Raichand said with finality in his tone and I want to roll my eyes at that

We had our dinner and I had my favourite ice cream along with others.

I went to Stuti's room but found her talking with her hubby.

Well let's not disturb the love birds.

I went back to my room and slept though I wasn't feeling tired. Tomorrow I have to go to the academy I already missed today.

If you think I get any kind of privilege because I'm engaged to the owner then you're thinking absolutely wrong.

But I like that no one is treated indifferently here all are equal..

With these thoughts I slept.

Time passed Really fast and today is the party.

Aashu has arranged clothes and jewellery for us.

I got a beautiful black and red long gown along with matching jewellery.

And Stuti also got some things like mine only.

We got ready by special artists, well you see the show off.

We both can get ready perfectly on our own at least I can and help stuti

We even got ready for our engagement alone but who will tell them.

Nevertheless we are looking gorgeous I must say.

Our dates are also looking good I must say. I can't lie that my brother in law isn't handsome. He is much more handsome than my man but boy I love my man more.

He came and took my hand in his without uttering a word.

Rude much!

We sat together in different cars

Again show off can't we all travel together?

Wasting petrol is really necessary?

I huffed at this but kept mum.

We reached the venue and the decoration is really pretty.

My breath hitched when he put his hand on my waist. What the hell does he think he is doing?

I tried to get out of his hold but whom I'm kidding he is not ready to leave me but his hold also tightens around me.

I look at stuti and Aashu the same goes with him placing his hand on her waist.

Is it some kind of rule or something like that?

Because now if I see clearly everyone has their partners holding by their waist.

"it's really nice to see you here Mr. Raichand. Who is this pretty lady beside you?" an oldie asked looking at us or looking at me with lust

What the fuck? This uncle is lusting over me? He should have a grandkid of my age.

"This is the future daughter in law of the Raichand family. I think that's enough for you to know. And by the way where Is your 4th wife? Check on her who knows like last time now whom she is seducing. It was me so I left but others can not leave you know what I mean. "Mr. Raichand said and I want to hug him tightly and give a cheek kiss

He did good with that oldie pervert. That oldie just left from there.

" you don't have to worry Turvi. I won't let anything happen to you. I will save you from everything. "He said and I felt honesty and sincerity in his words

" shall we dance? It's a ball after all. "He said and I was about to say no but he just dragged me in the dance floor

Just great.…..

Finally the dance is over and I just want to get away from him.

He just forced me to dance with him.

" wow Turu you both did so good. "Stuti gushed

" Yes you both did really good. And I must say you're a really lucky doll face. Because bhai doesn't dance with anyone. You're the first one only. "Aashu said and I looked at him wide eyes

Did Aashu just say what I heard?

If he doesn't dance with anyone then why force me to dance?

" maybe you hurted his big ego that's why. "my subconscious said

Yeah that can be a good reason. I have offended his arrogant self.

I just smiled at Aashu to not let my not so good thought come out

" I need to use the washroom . Will you come with me? "I asked her

I need to use it for real.

" yeah let's go "she said and I nodded

I just want the party to end as soon as possible but if I know that it's only the start.

# Chapter 33 fighting and getting drunk

Turvi's pov

I came into the washroom with a stuti who was looking at me with a raised eyebrow.

"what? Why are you giving me that look?" I asked her irritated

"care to spill the beans about what happened?" she asked me

She knows me very well.

"OK so I'm not gonna lie. Aashu's brother means my brother in law is really too much to handle. He just forced me to dance with him. And guess what, I'm the only one who got the privilege." I told her

She sighed and held my hand.

"Turu that man isn't easy to read you know. I have observed him for the past 2 days. He is mysterious and cold and his aura is dark like pure evil. But at the end of the day he is a human being just like you and me.

Try to understand him before judging. Maybe he wants to break the ice? You know after what ever happened. Who knows? It's maybe his style? His life isn't smooth that we know Aashu has told us everything right? And it was only a dance don't make it a big issue "she told me

And if I carefully pay attention to what she said I will say she is correct.

I should calm down and don't judge him again.

" Thank you so much yar. If you weren't here only God knows what would have happened to me. "I told her a dramatic sigh

" now do your business and come out. "she said as I enter the stall to do my business

Once I'm done I come out to find Stuti talking with a girl who is giving me Bitchy vibes from afar.

" any problems? "I asked no one particular

" oh here she is. The Slut of the year." that girl commented

Honestly telling that girl is beautiful is really beautiful. With her ginger red hair and striking blue eyes and fair skin.

But her personality and tongue is very much ugly.

Don't ask her name i dont know i took her from pintresrt randomly

"excuse me are you talking with me?" I asked her innocently

"Turvi let's go, we don't want any drama." stuti said but nah I don't want to go

First I have to know who is this bitchy queen who is calling me slut for no reason.

"who do you think is a slut here you bitch?" she said

Ahh! Slut, bitch is she calling herself?

"madam I don't think I know you but by your attitude I can sense that you know me. So tell me did I sleep with your boyfriend /fiance or husband? Maybe you can't satisfy him, that's why he came to me." I replied smiling sweetly

Take that bitch no one messes with me without any reasons.

" Turvi enough, "I heard stuti saying

" Yes you did. I don't even know what he has even seen in you. You're an ugly whore who is trapping both brothers in her trap. Engagement with the younger one and seducing the elder one. He rejected me Bethany Salvatore not once but twice "that girl Bethany spat

Ohh so she is some gold digger bitch or nasty arrogant bitch who didn't got any chance with my man or his brother

" my bad I got both but you got no one. You know why you didn't get them because you aren't worth keeping. And why did I get them because I deserve them now if you're done with your accusations and cursing game then can we go?" I asked and hold Stuti's hand and dragged her out

I didn't scream or curse this bitch that doesn't mean I'm not angry or going to ask for any explanation from my dear fiance.

She has accused me for something I never did and I don't want to bark at her and stoop down to her level.

Bitches bark and lionesses like me just ignore those.

"wow you just surprised me today. I didn't think you would handle this situation like this." stuti said clearly impressed

"see if it was old Turvi Ahuja she would be cursing the day she took birth because I would have scratch her oh so beautiful face and pull her hairs until she becomes bald but now I'm engaged and my husband belongs to a prestigious family and with him I also do belong to that family and it's my duty to save its image.

What will it look like if tomorrow's headlines came that Aaryav Raichand's brother's fiance was caught beating a girl in the prestigious ball? It won't look good right? So that's why I just handle her on her way. But now my fiance has to do a good explanation. "I told her as we reached where the boys are

They both are drinking good.

We Walked towards them.

" What took you both so long? I was about to go to search you both. "Aashu said but ignoring him I took his drink and gulped It down in one breath

I need it to calm myself.

" what are you doing? "he asked but ignoring him I took another drink and gulped it down the hard drink burn my throat

What the fuck was it?

" will you tell me what are you doing? "he asked holding my hand

" Who the fuck is Bethany Salvatore? "I asked both the brothers folding my hands on my chest

" where did you meet her? "Mr. Raichand asked me

" that's not the answer for my question. "I replied

" we can talk about it later. It's not the place we should talk about it. "Aashu said

" Then take me home right now. Because I'm sure as hell not going to calm down until I get to know who she is. "I told him

" Fine come, "He said and we followed him outside

I sat with Mr. Raichand and Stuti with Aashu.

" What did she say to Turvi? "Mr. Raichand asked

" Do you think I seduced you? "I asked him directly

" did she said that? "he asked

" ugh! Why can't you just answer my question simply? "I asked him with a pout

My eyes are becoming teary. I want to cry.

" fuck my life you're drunk. Great one drink and you're wasted. "He said and I giggled

" What did she say butterfly? And no you didn't seduced me "he asked again

" she said I'm an ugly whore who got engaged with one brother and seduced another. Do you think I'm ugly? "I asked him

If he says yes I'm sure I will cry so loud making his ear bleed.

" no you're not ugly but very beautiful. And that bitch Bethany is ugly not you. "He said with small smile

" you look good while you smile. You don't look good when you make that rich person's face. Keep smiling."I told him

My visions are blurring slowly. It's not good, not at all.

" are you a gay? I had read it in the tabloid? But you're so handsome. Why all handsome men are gay? "I asked him but he just tsked at it

" you would not be saying this if you were in your sense. Sleep Butterfly. You need it and don't worry about that bitch she won't bother you again. "He said and I felt sleepy

I relaxed a bit when I felt his hands caressing my hairs and face lovingly.

Soon sleep came in my eyes and I lost in a dreamless sleep.

# Chapter 34 The kiss

Turvi's pov

Pain is the only thing I'm feeling. Ahh my head is aching so bad.

I opened my eyes and closed it again.

God what the fuck just happened with me?

I again opened my eyes and sat up.

I got drunk again I see.

"Rise and Shine princess" I heard Stuti's voice who bring a glass with her

"here take it and gulp it down." She gave me the glass and I just gulped it down.

It was lemonade for my hangover.

I felt better after having it.

"So remember anything that happened last night?" she asked and I shook my head in no

"good. So….." she told me about that bitch Bethany Salvatore and my drinking stunt.

Lord, I should stop drinking because I seriously create blunders after getting drunk.

"like you don't create blunders when you're sober." my subconscious mocked

"Did he tell who Bethany is?" I asked her

"nope he will today as you fell asleep last night so the talk is pending." she informed me

I nodded and got up from the bed. I need a cold shower to come back in my senses.

I took shower and get dressed in a Baby pink plain button up full sleeves top tucked up in sky blue long skirt which reach few inches above her ankle

I asked Stuiti to go down as I'm coming.

Once I got downstairs I needed coffee for my headache.

I found the trio on the dining table.

"good morning." I greeted

"good morning," they replied

I sat down between stuti and Aashu.

I took Coffee and drank it.

"So how are you doing after drinking the strongest drink that took two glasses?" I heard Aashu asked in a mocking tone

He isn't at the place to mock Me not at all.

"Well better then what I felt when Bethany Salvatore called me a whore who seduced two brothers." I told him with a sarcastic smile

"Doll face that Bethany is no one important. She is one of the client's wife. After her husband died who was a perverted old hag. After his death she is trying to hit on bhai when he rejects her. She came to me when I also rejected her. She got mad and thus she is finding ways to embarrass us and saying those things to you is one of her tactics. Don't pay attention to her. You will find many girls like her who will say those rubbish things. Don't forget that you snatched a golden opportunity from them so they will do anything and everything to break our relationship. And now it depends on you how you will act on this. "He said

That jealous bitch she herself is a whore that's why she thinks everyone is a whore like her.

" But why did he say that I have seduced your brother? "I asked bluntly

" she thinks we both are sharing you. Her mind is dirtier than medical garbage. Don't think about her, she isn't worth it. "He said

" so will you continue your business with her? "I asked

" No. Not after her this stunt. "Mr. Raichand's voice boomed

He talked for the first time after I came.

" hmm, "I hummed and focused on my meal

I can feel someone drilling holes in my back but I didn't dare to look up.

I finished my breakfast and left for dance academy.

I can't skip it.

Days passed away like that only. Stuti left after two days.

Mumma still didn't talk to me.

I tried my best to avoid Mr. Raichand because we talk less and I argue with him more.

Aashu has showered his love on me very much and made me very happy.

My stay here before marriage is also coming to an end.

Stuti's wedding is near and I will leave from here two days before her pre wedding rituals starts.

Aashu is sad that I will leave but I told him that after this I will come to stay here permanently.

And that made him smile.

I have talked with papa daily and he is happy that I am achieving what I wanted to.

Today finally my course ended And I got the degree.

Now I can become a professional dancer and choreographer.

"Congratulations Doll face Finally you achieved it." Aashu said and hugged me

"thank you. But then tomorrow I will be leaving as well." I reminded him

"yeah I know no need to rub it in my face. It's just a matter of time I will get you back really soon and that too permanently." He said and I blushed

"don't blush like this doll face, it tempts my demons to claim this angel of mine." He said and if it's possible I blushed more

"control your demons for a few more days then I'm yours to do as you please." I told him and he smirked at that.

"come on let's celebrate your achievement. I will take you to somewhere special." He said and took me god knows where

"where are we?" I asked as he stopped near a old looking place

"it's my mother's house. Where she lived until she got married to my father. You know she was an orphan and has a great interest in dance and music just like you. A&A academy is her. She is the founder though she never said it in the media all know its my father who is the founder." Aashu said

"wow that's nice. She must be really graceful in dance then. But why didn't she say it in the media? " I asked

"Yes very much she was graceful. I have no idea why." He said

I felt his voice a little heavy so I thought to drop this matter.

"but why did you bring me here?" I asked

"to show you around." He said and took me inside the house

The house is small but decent one.

It gives a homely feeling.

"it's really pretty and cozy." I told him

"yeah. Bhai and I come here whenever we miss our parents. Because bhai has shifted their things here. So it won't hurt us more. He doesn't show but he also misses our parents and there is no denying that. He also comes here when he wants to escape reality for some time. And now I show you this place. So you can also come here to clear your mind. "He said with a heavy voice

He is missing his parents.

I smiled at him and went on my tip toes and pressed my lips on his.

He froze for a moment not expecting this but soon enough started to respond to me back.

He held my neck and tilted it to get better access.

He wanted to enter my mouth and I gladly accepted his demand.

We kissed for a good 5 minutes and then parted away to take breath.

"wow that was unexpected totally

But I enjoyed it very much. Our first kiss." "he said and I felt guilty for not telling him about that accidental kiss

But sometimes few lies are good for us and this lie is among them. It will save my and his relationship. And I didn't kiss his brother, it was just a peck.

I just hope that nothing goes wrong because deep inside my heart is feeling like something very wrong is going to happen.

# Chapter 35 the wedding begins

Turvi's pov

Finally I'm back home. I really missed it but I don't think the people here missed me.

And by people I mean my mother.

She made her choice. I see she loves her beliefs over me.

I sighed and pressed the bell. And the door was opened by my dear sister.

"Turu. Finally you're back. Oh god I missed you so much." stuti said and hugged me tightly.

"you're suffocating me idiot leave." I said dramatically and she sighed

"you won't change ever will you?" she asked

"Nope," I said popping the 'P'

"now love let me go inside." I told her

"Oh yes I'm sorry I forgot about it. Come." she said and step aside

I stepped inside and saw Mommy was cooking and Papa was nowhere to be seen.

The living room has some decoration items, not much because nothing is going to take place here.

I expected Mumma to once look at me but she didn't.

Well maybe this is how it's going to be.

After Stuti I should also get married as soon as possible.

Stuti gave my hand a firm squeeze understanding my emotions. I just smiled and went upstairs in my room.

If she wants to ignore me then I can do the same.

Tomorrow is Stuti's mehendi ceremony along with Sangeet. Day after tomorrow is Haldi and then marriage.

I'm so excited my dear sister will become a bride.

The day rolled off really quick me talking with stuti and trying to give her some moral support

She is a bit scared about all these things.

We had our food in my room only.

Papa also came and met me.

We decided to sleep together in my room until she gets married just like our childhood.

Next day came very soon.

It's a mehendi ceremony tonight along with Sangeet and I have to choose my dress as I have done a lot of shopping.

Few guests had came in our home and the same thing started

"you're so lucky to have a husband like him and you should behave accordingly bla bla bla.." those aunties started their lectures

I ignored them and made sure Stuti also ignored them.

In the evening first stuti got ready with the help of makeup artists yes we hired makeup artists because we want everything perfect and with other things going on don't have time to get ready alone and take a lot of time.

Stuti is ready in her Green pearl work lehenga with green pearl work bliss set along with green net work dupatta....

And I wore a Golden sleeveless blouse with green bacardi lehenga of big floral work....

We both are looking for a killer god to help our husbands.

We all reached the venue where the function is about to take place.

The groom's side is also present here but not my man.

His brother isn't coming tonight thankfully. He will come to the wedding directly as he has some work.

The mehendi artist started their work on Stuti's hands and legs.

"write my jiju's name like that, that he won't find it." I told the mehendi artist

"you are also next in line Turu. So say the much you can digest later when it comes on you." she said and I know what she meant

"see jiju is only looking at you." I said and she looked where I pointed

And guess what both look at each other's eyes and it's like both lost in each other.

Aww they look cute. But I have to burst the bubble of romance sadly.

"ahm ahm stuti don't give him a look that you want to eat him alive." I told her and she look at me with mouth agape

"you're so irritating." she huffed

"that I'm ,baby." I told her

"Now whose hubby is looking, they will faint?" she asked and I look at Aashu who is looking at me dreamily

And that's my cue to become a tomato.

"aww my Turu baby is blushing." she said and I glared at her

"what? Don't glare at me girl. I am only returning the favour." she said smugly

"yeah yeah whatever. Now it's time to show my dancing skills. After all, it's my sister's wedding." I told her and got up from my seat

Jiju has only one cousin just like stuti has me so basically it's a face off between us.

She is looking too over confident about her winning. Let's beat her and show who is in charge

We had chosen the Song Dola re.

We both started dancing and something happened I didn't think.

I lost my balance and fell down as I twisted my ankle.

Aashu came to help me with jiju.

That girl is giving me a smug look and eyeing my man.

Bitch! Move your fucking eyes from him otherwise I will scoop them up.

"Are you fine?" Aashu asked

"Yes I'm," I replied

"so bad you lost Turvi, I heard you want to become a professional dancer if this happens then God knows how you will cope up." that bitch taunted me

"Ishani! It's not a time or place to say these things and she is older than you so behave." Jiju scolded her

Serves her right huh!

"whatever. I won, that's what matters the most." she said and left

This bitch will eat my stuti alive. My naive stuti how will she cope up?

"I'm sorry from my sister's side. Please don't mind her." Jiju apologies

"it's fine jiju don't worry. I understand." I told him with a smile and felt Aashu squeezing the hell out of my hand

He is again jealous god what should I do with this grown up child?

"I think I should sit at one place." I said and Aashu helped me to settle beside stuti

"are you fine Turu? Sorry I couldn't get up as I had mehndi all over." she apologies

"it's ok and yes I'm fine. But you won't be fine after your marriage." I told her and she looked at me puzzled

"and why so?" she asked

"because you are going to get a bitch for your sister in law. She is a spoilt brat." I told her

"Ishani? Oh don't worry about her she doesn't stay with My in laws. She and her parents live separately and don't worry I can and will handle her. You just chill." she said and I nodded

The ceremony ended and I also applied mehendi on my hand

and it's time to check the mehendi after we came back.

" wow Stuti your mehendi colour is so deep. It means your husband will love you very much. "Mumma said

" you know stuti. Piya that 5 years old baby also applied mehendi and her mehendi is also dark. Her mom shared the pictures. If you will apply mehendi then it will obviously leave a mark and colour depends on time. The much you leave the better the colour will be simple. "I said smiling

People and their bull shit theories. I know I believe in few but that doesn't mean I will ignore the scientific reasons.

" I think now we should sleep. I'm hell tired and I know you're as well. So once you're done, come into the room. "I said and left from there

If Mumma is going to behave like this then fine I will also behave like this only.

# Chapter 36 Mrs stuti Suryash Mehra

Stuti's pov

Ever felt like you will just faint any moment in anxiety and tension?

It's happening to me. Today is my wedding. The biggest day of my life is here

The day that I have waited from long is here now.

Yes I have waited for this day because now I have a big reason to get married.

And the reason is that I like my husband very much. Maybe I have fallen for him as well. I don't know about it yet. I'm confused with my own feelings. But I guess with time it will be clear.

He is a really sweet yet perverted kind of person.

His talks always leave me blushing as hell.

Unknown to me he has captured my heart very slowly.

Yesterday was my haldi ceremony and we enjoyed it a lot. Others were like they are playing holi with haldi only.

Everyone is happy but not Turu. Not because she isn't happy for me but because Masi is totally ignoring her.

From the day she has left our home masi is hell angry on her.

I and mausa ji both tried so many times to make her understand and forgive her but she isn't ready to listen to anything.

She is a tough nut to crack. I don't know why she isn't ready to forgive her and understand her perspective.

From our childhood masi always tried to stop Turu from exposing herself in front of others may it be dance or in clothes.

But nevertheless at the end she accepted everything but this time she isn't ready.

I don't know what will happen after I get married.

Turu will be alone here until she also gets married.

I sighed and took a deep breath to calm myself down.

"Stuti what are you doing? Why aren't you ready?" masi asked me

"Masi, it's only 2 pm. I have 2 hours in my hand to rest. After that I will get ready don't worry." I told her

"how can I not worry? Today is my daughter's wedding. Everything has to be perfect as my perfect daughter. Be a perfect daughter in law and wife beta. Never let your husband or in laws find any fault in you. And most importantly never say no to your husband. Let him have you, he has all rights on you. Be a submissive woman and your life will be smooth. Every man needs a submissive girl not a spit fire like your rebel sister. Only God knows how her husband will control her; he should put the leash on her before it's too late. I know you will do the correct thing only if you're not a disappointment like your sister. "masi said and honestly her words doesn't make any sense to me

What am I? A puppet? I am a calm girl that doesn't mean I don't have my opinions on my life or anything. Husband or not I won't let anyone control me.

And about Turu she is herself alone capable of taking care of herself. And she isn't a dog that needs to be leashed.

I wanted to tell her this but I didn't. She is my savior after my parents she and mausa ji have raised me so I can't disrespect her by talking over her.

"Masi Turu is not that bad. She is different, that's it. Everyone is different na. Don't worry about her or me, we both will be fine." I told her with a smile and my eyes go towards the door where Turu is standing

Shit! She heard everything oh god she must be hurt very much.

Turu is a very sensitive girl. She doesn't show it but her family affects her the most. If someone close hurts her then it affects her really bad.

Her eyes are glossy as well.

"Turu come inside, why are you standing there?" I asked her

She has already heard enough no need for extra work.

"nothing just wanted to spend some time with you. But you're busy. I will come later." saying she left from there

"see such a brat she is. In the place of apologising she is giving me a cold shoulder and taunting me. Such a shameless girl she is. Already people are talking that she has spent 2 months with her fiance and god knows what. I'm trying to shut them up but they are just too much. Anyways I'm leaving I have work to do. You try to put some sense in her pea size brain before getting ready. "masi said and I kept my mouth shut

I only nodded at her and she left.

I sighed and went to Turu's room and found her standing near the window.

" Turu, "I called her

" yeah, why are you here? You should have called me. I would have gone. It's not good that the bride herself is walking around and tiring herself. You have a long long night babe. You need energy for it." she said turning towards me

She is trying to show that she is fine but I know she isn't.

" Yes I do need energy and that I will get by doing this. "I said and hugged her tightly

She also hugged me back.

" she didn't mean it Turu you know her. Her tongue is Bitter like Neem leaves but her heart is not." I said and she just hummed

Something has changed in her and I'm not understanding what has changed in her.

From yesterday she isn't herself. I even asked her but she just shrugged it off.

" stuti "she call me name seriously

" hmm, "I hummed

" don't forget to share the details of your wedding night. It will help me on my own. "She said seriously and it took me some time to register what she said

I am sure my face is resembling a tomato.

" god I will kill you. "I told her

" You won't if you do then my Aashu will be left alone. And then he won't leave you. "she said and laughed.

" OK jokes apart I will surely miss you this year. This two months without you were pure torture only god knows how will I survive future. "she said

" don't worry, your Aashu won't let you miss me. He will fill the void. Now let's rest , we need to look perfect. "I told her and she nodded

" Wait, before leaving take your gift" she said and handed me big boxes.

I opened the boxes and found bangles and earrings.

"they are beautiful, thanks" I told her

"I know," She said and I hit her

We both go in my room and talk about random stuff.

Her mood is better now as she is smiling a real smile.

Time passed and the make up artists came to get me ready.

Turu was there looking at me while I was getting ready.

It took me 3 hours to get ready in my bridal attire..

The red lehenga, ornaments and chura are all giving me chills.

They are reminding me of the change that is about to happen in my life soon.

Turu has also got ready. She is looking beautiful in her attire that has a Pista green lehenga set with full sleeves deep v neck blouse and same color lehenga with golden thread work over it with a net nude peach pink dupatta of golden border..

"you're looking breathtaking babe." she compliment me

"you too are looking gorgeous." I said and that's true

Everything is set and now it's time for me to get ready for Jaimala. We have come to the venue and I'm waiting here for them to call me.

Turu is with me to support me.

I covered my face and went downstairs with Turu.

I can see everything as my veil is transparent.

I hold my breath as my eyes fall on him.

He is looking breathtaking.

I slowly went towards him and the rest became blurred.

I didn't notice when the marriage was done.

My trance broke when he made me wear the mangalsutra first (nuptial chain) then filled my hair partition with sindur (vermilion) making me his for 7 life's.

"Finally you're Mrs. Stuti Suryash Mehra. Now no one can separate us." He said and I smiled shyly

This is the truth. Now I'm his wife.

Turu took 35,000 for hiding his shoes and he even gave it without any bargain. And the smile on her face was worth it. She didn't expect that he would give it without debate.

After marriage the worst thing is bidai where a girl has to leave her home to go with her husband.

Why did we girls have to leave only?

I cried very much and hugged everyone even I cried hugging Aashu as well.

He is like my brother more than a friend.

After crying a lot, I finally said my bye.

Turu was also crying very much and Aashu supported her. I hope they both will be there for each other like this.

I will again come here for a pag phere ritual where the girl comes back to her house after marriage and stays a day or two.

"don't cry this much Stuti, you can meet them any time you want. I also took a transfer. We are staying here only. Don't worry I don't like you crying. Your tears are too precious to be wasted like this." Suryash ji cooed at me and I don't know why I felt like crying more hearing him

I did a very stupid thing and that is I hugged him tightly and cried my eyes out.

He caressed my head and whispered sweet nothings.

I felt heat raising my cheeks when I realised what I did.

I wanted to get away from him but he didn't let me.

"never ever think to leave me or go away from me. Now you're tied with me. Till your last breath." He said and hugged me tightly

He and his possessiveness what will I do with it?

I thought and I sighed…

# Chapter 37 shattered soul

Turvi's pov

"don't cry, Doll face. Calm down." Aashu tried to calm me down but my tears aren't in a mood to stop

My sister left me alone here. I never stayed away from her except this 2 months and they were pure hell but now she is gone to her new home.

But it's not the real reason behind my tears. The real reason behind my behaviour is the bitter truth that I got to know two days back.

"Doll face something is bothering you?" he asked me and I cried more

"Turvi!" Mumma called my name but I know its a warning

"Aashu I need to talk about something. Can we please meet soon?" I asked him

"We will meet tomorrow evening at Stuti's reception only." He said but I shook my head

"I need to talk about something important we need to meet separately." I told him and he understand my point and nodded his head

"now i have to go bye." I told him and hugged him for last time

I walked towards Mumma who was waiting for me.

"Turvi how shameless have you become? Hugging your fiancé in public in front of everyone? Girls maintain their distance from their husbands in public and here you're hugging him shamelessly. Have some shame. Don't tarnish our image in front of everyone." she said and I kept mum

I didn't replied anything to her.

" now stay silent and show your attitude to me. God knows why I got you as my daughter." she said and a sarcastic smile appeared on my face

" am I your daughter Mumma or I better call you masi?" I asked letting her know that I know everything

"how do you know?" she asked shocked knowing that I know

"Diwar ke bhi kaan hote hai (the walls also has ears)" I said and walked away from her

While walking away I bumped on someone.

"sorry," I apologise

"it's ok." He replied and I saw its Mr. Raichand

I don't need this right now. I wanted to walk away from him but he caught my hand.

"are you OK?" he asked me suddenly

"I'm fine," I said and Freed my hand from his grip

I sat inside the car and waited for Papa and Mumma to join me.

They came and papa's face screamed that he knows that I know the truth.

The truth that just changed everything for me. And shook me from the core.

I ignored their gaze and looked outside.

The night road is calm but my heart is in chaos and this calm isn't calming me at all.

It's almost midnight when we reached our house.

I walked out of the car and went inside my room before they could stop me.

I can't take it anymore. I removed the ornaments I wore and freed my hairs from the tight bun.

I need a shower right now.

I stripped from my clothes and put them in a hanger and stepped inside the washroom.

Taking a relaxing shower I got ready for sleeping..

But sleep is far away from my eyes. I hadn't slept peacefully for two nights but I didn't let Stuti know about it.

She was happy and I have no right to destroy her happiness with my sorrow.

And she couldn't do anything about it as well.

So it's better that I didn't tell her anything she doesn't need to know about this not now at least.

She deserves happiness. Maybe she isn't my blood sister but I love her more than a blood sister.

How could they lie to me? How? Doesn't I deserve to know the truth?

If I didn't overheard them that night then I would have never known this.

Flashback

Two days back on the mehendi ceremony night.

I woke up feeling thirsty and found stuti sleeping heavily.

She is tired so obviously she will sleep only.

I looked around to find a bottle but found none.

Sighed, I got up to drink water from the kitchen.

I came downstairs to have water when I saw Mumma and papa's room light on.

It's pretty late, they should be asleep till now.

Maybe they are talking about the marriage.

I took a bottle from the fridge and drank water and took it with me.

"Why can't you just forget everything Minakshi? It's so many years from that incident." I heard papa's voice

Papa never talks in a loud voice. What happened that he is talking like this now?

Curiosity killed the cat and my curiosity took the best out of me.

I go towards their room to clearly hear what they are talking about.

" No, I can't forget anything. After what ever happened I tried but that girl she is an ungrateful girl. She is just a bad omen in our life." Mumma said and a pang of hurt hit me hard

What is she talking about?

"Minakshi doesn't use that word for my daughter. She isn't a bad omen." papa said sternly.

"exactly she is only your daughter not mine. I can't believe that for her I did everything. The day this girl took birth everything became wrong. While taking birth she killed my twin sister, her birth mother. Then because of her our baby died in my womb and I became infertile. Because of her tantrums Didi and jijaji (Stuti's parents) met with an accident and died. It's all because of her. She is a walking destruction. Wherever she goes destruction comes with her. I married you only to take care of her but she being an ungrateful girl is ignoring me giving me the fruit of my love and care"Mumma said and my heart skipped a beat

The hold on my water bottle became tight as tears freely flowed from my eyes.

" Kamakshi chose Turvi over herself; it wasn't her fault. You were running behind her and forgetting about your pregnancy, not her fault. That day of the accident she didn't ask them to take her out, they themselves took her and that accident isn't her fault as well. So stop saying that my daughter is a bad omen.

Tell me one thing Minakshi did you ever loved Turvi freely? Did you ever see her as the equal of Stuti? No you didn't. You had always made her feel degraded. You stopped her from doing what she likes. You point out her clothing style on her behaviour and Even tried to stop her from dancing. Then what did you expect from her? Turvi Is like a river and if you try to stop it's flow forcefully it will cause destruction and nothing else. You always saw her as your step daughter. Not your daughter. You always saw her as a bad omen and a burden. How many times have you compared between Stuti and Turvi? How many times have you said that Turvi isn't like stuti?

Stuti is a good girl. She is talented and very nice but Turvi is also talented. She is a graceful dancer. Just like her mother. Yes she is outspoken yes she wears modern clothing so what? That doesn't make my daughter bad.

Stuti lets you control her and Turvi doesn't. That's the difference between them.

I never say anything between you two because I always respected you and your sacrifice for my daughter. I thought you loved her but no you don't.

Just a few more days, Minakshi a few more days and like Stuti she will also leave us and go away from here.

Just a few days don't treat her like this. I beg you. "papa said and it's enough for me

I couldn't stand there and hear this anymore.

I came back to my room and placing the water bottle aside I ran inside the washroom.

I don't know why I'm feeling nauseated and I threw up everything I ate.

My Tears aren't stopping.

Truth is always bitter. I have heard and today I faced it as well.

My whole life I thought why Mumma is like this with me?

She loves me but still shows her harshness towards me.

I thought it's her orthodox mentality but no it's not.

She just hates me and thinks of me as a bad omen.

That's why she hates me.

Did I really kill my mother? My unborn sibling? And Stuti's parents?

Will she also hate me and blame me for this?

Am I Really a bad omen?

Thinking this I broke down again…

Present

That night I didn't sleep either.

But tonight I'm exhausted. My body is screaming at me to sleep but my mind is just not listening.

I got up from my bed and found a strip of sleeping pills that I stole from papa.

I took one pill and gulped it down to sleep.

I need to sleep so she gain energy so I can do what I have planned.

Just a few days then I won't be here in your life. I won't disturb any of you ever again.

# Chapter 38 Stuti's Reception

Turvi's pov

I woke up from my sleep when I felt that someone was calling my name.

I'm not in a mood to open my eyes because I'm still tired.

"Turvi beta wakes up late now." I heard again

With great difficulty I opened my eyes and saw its Mumma no she is not my Mumma.

"it's 12 pm when will you wake up?" she asked and I looked at the clock

It's indeed 12 pm, well maybe it's the sleeping pills effect.

"I'm awake now. Thank you for waking me up but you don't have to bother about me." I told her with a blank look on my face

She thinks I'm a bad omen who killed her loved ones. She hates me. I can't forget the look I saw in her eyes for me.

I'm a black spot in the name of my daughter.

Every word is engraved in my mind permanently.

I won't be an ungrateful girl by not acknowledging that she raised me maybe with hatred for me but still she did.

"Turvi we have to talk." she said and I looked at her

"I don't think so." saying I got up from my bed and enter washroom

I won't cry I won't not any more. She hates me. That's her problem, not mine.

When I heard the door opening and closing indicating that she left I sighed and got ready after taking a warm shower.

I am not in a mood to go Downstairs but I have to at least to feed my stomach. I can't keep torturing myself for this and I have to go to Stuti's reception as well.

She must be busy with everything there.

I can't let her know that something is off, not at least now.

I never hide things from her nor I will now but till her pag phera I will hide it.

I went downstairs and made coffee and toast for me.

I ignored papa who is looking at me trying hard to start a conversation.

I took my food and a packet of chocolate and a few fruits to my room.

I won't go downstairs now after eating my breakfast I had chocolate.

It is my heaven. My small and sweet heaven.

In the afternoon papa came to call me for lunch but I denied him calmly.

"what is wrong with you Turvi? Why are you behaving like this?" he asked me

"because I'm like this papa. Stubborn and short tempered. And maybe a walking disaster as well. It will be better if you keep your distance. Who knows what happens next moment because of me after all I'm the bad omen ain't I? Just please leave me alone papa. Please. "I said hinting clearly that I have heard everything that they were talking

" Turvi it's not what.…… "" please leave." I cut him off and he sighed and left eventually

Tu nahi royegi Turvi kamzor nahi parna tujhe. (you won't cry Turvi you can't become weak)

I ate the fruits and the chocolate later for my late lunch.

I got ready in a Pink full sleeves floral blouse with dark orange banarsi lehenga along with a orange plain net dupatta of glider border...

After getting ready I put my dazzling smile on display like every time but the difference is this time it's a fake smile.

I went downstairs and saw them ready.

Our relatives will reach there on their own so we also left from here.

We reached there and I got happy for real seeing stuti. She is looking so beautiful.

Her sindoor and mangalsutra is doing wonders on her look.

She is looking so happy with jiju.

I went towards them and the first thing I did is I hugged her tightly.

And she hugged me back.

I needed this hug very much.

"I missed you stuti. But I bet you didn't miss me at all. After all you have jiju now." I teased her

"Who said I didn't miss you? I missed you a lot and no one can take your place in my life, not even your jiju." she replied

"Did you listen jiju what she said? You can't take place." I told him with a smirk..

Our relationship is now normal as it should be.

"I don't intend to take your place away my half wife." He replied with a wink making me laugh

"it's just one day and I miss you so hard. What will happen in future." I whined

"don't worry we will be habitual of it." she said smiling

"by the way where is Aashu?" she asked and I noticed my jiju stiffen a little

"he is on the way. Don't worry. And jiju chilax Aashu is my full husband and her brother so no need to be jealous over him." I told them and laughed

"jokes apart I'm really happy for you both. But jiju remember this one tear from her eyes and consider yourself dead your uniform will not be able to save you." I told him and he raise his hand in surrender

Then my parents came and I distanced myself a little from them.

My eyes land on Aashu who has come with his brother.

I go towards them and hugged Aashu ignoring his brother royally

" stuti was asking for you." I told him

"yeah we will meet her." He said

I can feel Mr. Raichand's gaze on me but I care less about him.

We go towards the couple and they congratulated them.

I almost laughed when Aashu hugged stuti and jiju huffed

"are you fine Turvi?" suddenly Mr. Raichand asked me

"Yes I'm why do you ask?" I asked him back

"because your eyes look sad. Your lips may smile but your eyes are talking something else." He said and I gaped at him

How on the earth did he get to know that I'm sad? And out of everyone he?

"you're reading too many novels it seems. My eyes are saying nothing." I told him and clingged to Aashu

I don't know why but this brother of Aashu gives me evil vibes.

Don't think about him Turvi and destroy your already fucked up mood.

The rest of the evening passed away so fast. I avoided Mr. Raichand and my parents and stayed with Aashu only.

And shooed that witch of a sister in law of my sister Ishani.

Again hitting on my man. Giving him seductive smiles.

She thinks she is looking seductive but in real she looks like a witch

Itna bara engagement ring dikhta nahi hai kya? (can't she see the big engagement ring?)

Huh anyways I know how to save my man from others so I did it.

At the time of leaving I told Aashu to meet me in the morning as I have something important to discuss and he agreed.

Leaving Stuti again was hard but nevertheless I did it.

And took a promise from her that we will talk every day no matter how busy we are. We will spend 5 minutes at least talking to each other and she promised me this happily.

With this the reception ended on a good note.

# Chapter 39 unexpected Turns Of Events

Turvi's pov

Life takes a drastic turn in a small span of time. We never think that we will do this kind of thing in our life but we do.

Just like me, I never thought I would be marrying like this by not informing my parents.

Yes today is my marriage with Aashu. We both decided to get married on paper first and leave my house so we can get married again later.

To be honest it's my idea to do so. Staying here with them is becoming hard for me.

It's suffocating me to no end.

The words are engraved on my heart and no matter how I try they just don't want to get erased.

10 days have passed since Stuti's reception.

I still remember when I met Aashu. Next day of Stuti's reception.

"hii doll face," he said as he came where I asked him to meet me

"hii," I replied timidly

"are you alright?" he asked me and I shook my head in no

"no I'm not. I'm not alright Aashu." I told him and started crying

I am crying a lot after whatever I hear from my parents.

"hey, what happened why are you crying?" he asked as he wiped my tears

"Aashu, I am in pain. Extreme pain. It's hurting me very bad." I said

"will you tell me clearly?" he asked and I told him everything

Once I finished him telling everything he was fuming in anger.

"how could she blame you for everything? I mean that's illogical and has no sense in this. You were a kid when everything took place" he said and kept mum

I don't know what to reply.

"what do you want to do with a doll face? Whatever you do I'm with you." He said

"Will you marry me?" I asked him

"obviously I will. Remember we are engaged." He said and I shook my head

"I want to get married as soon as possible and not in a lavish way. I know papa can't arrange money for my wedding as Stuti's wedding took a toll on him though jiju's family helped a lot but still. And he won't accept money if you offer him. He is a very honest person and loves his self respect very much. "I told him

" then what you suggest? "he asked me

" court marriage. "I told him and he looked at me with sadness

" court marriage? Then what about your dreams about your wedding? You have so many dreams to fulfil. "He said and I chuckled

My dreams of marriage are the least important thing for me right now.

I don't want to stay where I'm considered as a bad omen. The woman whom I loved as my mother isn't my mother and hates me and blames me for the things I never did.

She always behaved rudely with me and the reason is clear.

Papa also stays quiet for this reason only.

It was better if my mother had chosen herself, not me.

Then maybe she would be alive and I won't be the bad omen here.

People can say I'm over reacting on this matter.

Judging is really easy but when you're in that situation you understand the depth of it.

"I only want to be with you Aashu. Permanently, legally. Marry me please. We can get married or throw a party later but I want to get married and leave that house." I told him

"what about your parents will they agree with it?" he asked me

They won't I know. At least papa won't agree with it.

He has his own dreams to see me getting married and as I'm his only daughter he won't like this.

But I don't have any option other than this.

In front of my pain that is nothing.

"they won't and we won't tell them. After the wedding I will tell them and leave. And we will do it after Stuti's pag phera ritual. I don't want to ruin her happiness." I told him and he nodded

"won't you inform stuti as well?" he asked

I trust Stuti and I never hide anything from her from our childhood and neither will I hide this.

"I will. I will tell her everything." I told him

"doll face I love you and for you I will do anything and everything. Whenever you feel weak you will find me with you as your strength." He said and kissed my forehead

I must have really done some good deeds to get a person like him as my husband.

Stuti and Aashu both are two strong pillars in my life.

I came back after meeting him and the day passed normally.

Next day Stuti came for her pag phera ritual.

Everything was perfect like picture perfect.

At night I told stuti everything about my life just now and about the plan for my marriage as well.

She was shocked and hurt just like me.

She hugged me tight and said to never blame myself for what ever happened.

She even didn't blame me for her parents death…..

The ringtone of my phone brings me back from my land of thoughts.

It's Stuti.

"hii," I said

"hi, are you ready?" she asked me

She will join us directly in court only.

I asked her to not come here because that will draw their attention on me.

"yeah I'm. I wore my normal Sleeveless white body fit dress with a multicolored shirt tied on the waist. I can't wear any kind of heavy clothing." I told her

I definitely can't wear something heavy and again get questioned.

"hmm I know. Don't worry I have bought a  saree for you and Aashu has brought jewellery.

We will get you ready before the marriage

takes place." she said and I smiled

They take care of my needs and wishes so much.

"OK I will reach there soon as I will be leaving now." I told her and she hummed

"come soon we are here already." she said

"yeah bye stuti. And I love you so much babe you're the best sister anyone can have." I told her and cut the call

I wrote a note for my parents and kept it on my bed.

Dear Parents ,

I hope by now you guys know that I know the reason behind my mom ...I mean my masi hates me.

I am really sorry for the fact that for me you have to lose my birth mother.

But tell me honestly, was it my fault to take birth? Was it my fault that she loved her daughter more than her life ? Was it my fault that Stuti's parents died?

Trust me,no child wants to see her/his parents dead...if it was in my hand I would have saved my mother and killed myself.

I really wish I would have died instead of her or with my mother only ….at least I wouldn't have to be a bad omen of your family.

Thank you so much Masi for taking care of me from my birth till now...though you did it with hatred but still you did. It's a very big thing itself.

Papa,what can I say to you? Because of me,you have to lose your wife? I am so sorry for that. But thank you for being my father.

Now the interesting thing is I want to give you guys good news. That is, your bad omen is leaving your house forever…

Yes ,I am leaving your house to never come back. No I am not angry at you...I am hurt...I am terribly hurt that my heart aches too much and it suffocates me.

Anyways Bye ..

I hope after my absence, the prosperity, the happiness, good omen everything comes back to your home.

Just one regret will remain always in my life, that is I can't be the perfect daughter whom you guys wanted.

Good Bye & Take Care.

Turvi.

The letter is written by SrijeetaBhowmick

Now it's time to go home. I will miss you very much but don't miss me much.

I told my room and went downstairs.

No one is there.

I don't know if I should be happy that no one is there to question me or be sad that I could not see them for the last time.

I have a very strong feeling that this is the last time I am seeing these things and maybe my parents as well.

I shook my negative thoughts and stepped outside.

I took my car That Aashu has gifted me as our engagement gift.

I haven't used it much before.

Throwing a longing look to my house I started the engine and drove away.

My heart is feeling heavy very much and I want to cry but I won't cry.

Today is the happiest day of my life, my marriage and I won't turn it into a sad day by crying.

I drove towards the court when suddenly a truck came from opposite side and hit my car

An ear piercing scream passed my lips and I felt darkness surrounding me.

# Chapter 40 she is dead

Stuti's pov

Life is really unpredictable how it turns out to be no one knows.

Few months back I didn't even think about my marriage or something about it and here I'm.

Married and so much in love with my husband.

Marrying him is one of the best things ever happened to me.

He loves me so much more than me.

He cares for me and is even ready to fulfil my dreams and he even give me time to adjust with everything and he didn't even kiss me touching is some other thing.

Yeah he cuddles with me when we sleep but that's it.

But my heart is in pain for my sister. If I'm happy in my life then her life is totally changed in a blink of an eye.

I never thought that masi isn't her mother but my another masi is.

Her behaviour wasn't the best with Turu but I thought it's because of the thinking difference but no it wasn't.

Turu is badly hurt by all this and that's why she decided to marry Aashu and leave the house without even telling them.

I thought of telling them but then decided against it. It's her life and she has the right to do anything. So I should respect her decision and I did.

And right now me Suryash ji and Aashu are here in front of court. His brother is also not present here.

Me and Suryash ji are going to be witnesses of their marriage.

But this girl isn't here yet. I called her so many times but she isn't receiving my calls.

"Where the hell is she?" Aashu exclaimed impatiently

"don't worry she will come. I talked with her a few minutes ago." I told him

"Half an hour ago," Suyash ji corrected

"Yeah she must be stuck in traffic" I reasoned

But why I'm feeling something is wrong.

No stuti don't think negative. Nothing is wrong. Everything is fine.

"Suryash ji your phone is vibrating." I told him as he didn't noticed it

"Oh yeah, thanks," saying he walked away from me

"Aashu calm down," I said

"Stuti, Aashank " Suryash ji called our name

"yeah," I replied

"We need to leave from here." He said and I raised my eyebrows in a questioning manner

"What do you mean we have to leave? Doll face hasn't come yet." Aashu said

"And she won't even come here as well. I got a call from my colleague Turvi's car has meet with an accident and..." he stopped abruptly

"And?" I asked him impatiently

No! This can't happen. My Turu my sister is alive and safe. Nothing happened to her.

My heart is beating hard inside my rib cage.

"And the girl inside hasn't survived the accident. The car blasted and her body was totally burnt." He finished and my world collapsed

I don't know what happened next but darkness surfaced around me and I embraced it.

**********

I open my eyes panting hard. It's all a bad dream, a nightmare, yes.

But why am I in my previous room? I was in my house right? I got up from the bed and go downstairs

In front me my girl is laid down. Her body is covered because she is hurt very bad.

I looked around myself and found many people gathering here. Making her feel suffocated.

Why have they covered her? How will she breath?

"Suryash ji who is she? Why is she covered fully and why is she here? She should be in hospital na?" I asked him but he just looked at me

I looked at masi and mausa ji. They were balling their eyes out and Aashu was also crying sitting beside the girl.

"Why are you all crying? And why is this girl here? And where is Turu? Call her now." I said loudly making them cry hard

"Stop crying and call her. Or give me my phone I will call her." I told them

"Stuti Turvi..." "Suryash ji please not now. I already had a bad dream. Give me my phone. I will call her and you all stop crying and take this girl to the hospital." I cut him off

"Stuti this girl is Turvi. She is dead. It's her body." Suryash ji said holding me

"You're joking. Right? Suryash ji I didn't like this not at all. Don't joke about these things. Now call her." I told him

"I'm not joking, stuti , open your eyes and see her body. It's her. It's your sister, your Turu. SHE. IS. DEAD" he said and I slapped him hard

Husband or not I won't leave anyone who talks bad about my Turu. And he is saying she is dead

"Why are you lying? I said na nothing happened to her. Call her or let me call her." I told him angrily

"He is right Stuti, Turvi is no more. She left us, my daughter left us." masi said..

"Aashu please say something to see what rubbish they are talking." I told him but he only cried hard

"She is a dead stuti. Please understand this. See her hand. The ring. Her height, her figure, see." Suryash ji said and I looked at it carefully

It's all the same with Turu. My Turu is no more.

She is no more. She left me. She left us alone.

My sister left.. She was not only my sister but my friend and my supporter as well.

I want to cry, I want to scream but nothing happened.

I can't do anything I'm feeling like stone.

Suryash ji is hugging me and trying to sooth me but nothing worked.

I became a statue. They took her away to finish her last rituals.

Suryash ji took me there. I stood there helplessly and looked how they laid her on the pire and burned her.

She became ashes in front of me.

It wasn't supposed to be like this. She was supposed to marry Aashu and start a new phase of her life, not end it.

After collecting her ashes we all go back. But Aashu didn't

came with us while he was still there.

Masi is still crying. Why is she crying now? Isn't she happy that she is dead?

"Why are you crying now masi? Aren't you happy? The bad omen of your life is dead. You should be happy and dance in joy isn't it?

Why are you even crying about fake shows for others? No need for that. Here present everyone knows the truth that she wasn't your daughter.

Then why this drama? She is gone now. You wanted her to die right? It should be her that should die, not your sister or your child or my parents. Then she died. Why are you crying? "I asked her and she looked shocked by my outburst

" Stuti you're not in your sense. "Suryash ji said and I shook my head in no

" She told me everything. Everything. You both hurt her very much. The truth came out in a brutal way in front of her. That broke her heart.

My sister is gone because of you and I will hate you for that forever. I'm not an ungrateful girl who will forget everything that you did for me.

I won't forget anything and I will fulfil my duties that I'm supposed to but don't even expect the same love from me. "I told her

" Take me out of here. I can't stay here anymore. "I told Suryash ji and he took me back to our house

Ma and Papa are not here, they are gone on a business trip.

" Stuti, look at me. "Suryash ji said and I looked at him

" Cry stuti. Cry your heart out. Cry until you don't have any tears left to shed." He said and I looked at him blankly..

" Cry your sister, your friend, your Turu died. She is no more between us. Cry for her cry for this loss. Cry." He said and a lone tear escape my eyes

Following its suit many more start to fall one by one.

Soon enough I was screaming and crying hard in his embrace.

Last time I cried like this when I realised that my parents won't be with me anymore.

I was too young to understand what exactly happened but when I realised it was the worst time for me.

Now again I'm crying for my sister for my Turu.

"She didn't deserve to die Suyash ji she didn't." I told him between my crying

"She got what god fixed for her stuti. We can't do anything. And yes she definitely didn't deserve to die." He said his own eyes are moist

My Turu was like this only whomever she met she left an impact on them her personality always made people love her, adore her and sometimes hate her.

But now she is gone...

That night I cried until I couldn't shed a single tear and fell asleep on his chest only.

# Chapter 41 in the cage of the devil

Author's pov

A girl is lying on the bed oblivious of her surroundings without any fear or tension.

Though her body is injured a bit but she is fine the medicine did good work on her body to heal them.

On the other side a man is looking or I say gawking at her like she is some magical thing and in a puff she will be gone if he didn't stare at her all the time. His blue eyes are only on her.

Soon a knock on the door broke his staring session.

"Come in," he said knowing well that who it can be

"Good evening master, may I check our mistress?" the lady doctor asked

The man only gave a curt nod to her and she started her work.

"How long will it take for her to become normal again?" the blue eyed man asked

"Master, mistress is better than before her condition has improved and hopefully she will be awake tonight." the lady doctor said

"Good, now you can leave." the blue eyes man said

"Mistress is really lucky that you love her master. And I can predict that you both will be a perfect couple." The lady doctor said smiling but from inside she is cursing the man with her whole heart

Love? people don't harm the person they love wholeheartedly but yes in obsession they do even they can kill as well.

If it wasn't for her family and life matter then she would have never ever agree to come and treat this girl and give her a life with never ending pain till her last breath

" That we are. My beautiful butterfly and her captor." The blue eyed man said with a creepy smirk and sipped his drink

Suddenly the girl on the bed started

to move. After 5 long days she showed movements on her body.

"Mistress is waking up, master." the lady doctor said..

"Check her. Make sure that she is fine." that blue eyed man ordered

The girl opened her eyes finally and adjusted with her surroundings.

To her relief the surrounding isn't bright much so it didn't hurt her eyes or head.

The lady doctor checked her and found her perfectly fine if you ignore her bruised body and a sprained hand.

"where am I?" the girl asked finding herself in a luxurious room that doesn't belong to her obviously

"You're safe butterfly, that's enough for you to know where you are, it doesn't matter." the intimidating and rough voice echoed in the room

The girl looked at the owner of the voice and frowned a little bit because she definitely didn't expect him to be here. She expected her fiance to be with her, not her brother obviously.

" Where is Aashu?" the first question she asked that blue eyed man making him fist his hand but he calmed himself saying that she doesn't know yet that she belong to him that's why she is taking his name

"He won't come here butterfly, not now, not ever. Now here only we both are and will be together." The blue eyed man said making the girl roll her eyes

She is weak but her attitude hasn't lessened a bit.

"What is wrong with you Mr. Raichand? What rubbish you're talking. And where the hell I'm? Where is Aashu? Where is stuti? My parents? Call them here now. And what butterfly? I have a name Turvi call me only." Turvi said

The lady doctor is praying for her mistress who is definitely going to face her master's wrath for disrespecting him.

" You can leave. "Aaryav said and the lady doctor left bowing her head In front of him

" Now butterfly you will just shut your pretty mouth and will listen to me ok? Do not interrupt me in between. "Aaryav said dangerously going towards her

" What the hell? Please call someone else. "Turvi said, suddenly fearing him..

Suddenly a loud voice of slap echoed in the room.

Aaryav slapped her hard to make her feel dizzy.

She could feel the metallic taste in her mouth.

She held her cheek that was throbbing hard by the slap.

She is scared by this and angry as well but her anger is not bigger than her fear for the man in front of her.

Her eyes teared Feeling the pain.

" Why don't you obey me once butterfly, why? See I had to punish you. Now shh! Not a word before I ask you to say anything." He said caressing the place where he slapped her

"1st thing never ever disrespect me or disobey me. I don't like disobedience. Nor I forgive who disrespect me though you're exceptional that I have forgiven you so many times for disrespecting me.

2nd thing now you have no one except me. No family, no friends, no one. I'm your only family friend and obviously your lover...

3rd thing learn how to control this sharp tongue of yours or I won't hesitate to chop it off.

4th thing never ever think about any other man who is not me. No other men including your father and my brother as well. Now he is your brother in law as you are mine. But still no thinking about him because I know you love him and will think wrong about him.

5th thing be a perfect submissive wife you will stay out of trouble if I find you breaking any rules of it then butterfly believe me the punishment won't be only this slap. "Aaryav finished and Turvi is looking at him with wide eyes

She can't believe what she is hearing.

" You gotta be kidding me Mr. Raichand. And how dare you slap me? Who are you to raise your hands on me? And where the hell is Aashu? Does he know that you are behaving like a psychotic man with me?" Turvi asked him

Though she is scared, she needs to answer her questions.

Nothing makes sense to her now. His talks are absurd.

" Did you forget the rules right away butterfly? I just told you the rules. You're such a bad student but no worries I will make you perfect my perfect butterfly.

I know everything is very confusing for you but don't worry I will clear this.

See you were engaged to my brother but now you will be my wife. You loved my brother now you will love me.

You had a family before now you have me only as your family.

In short, forget whatever you had and learn to adjust in this life.

You are mine. My possession, my obsession.

Don't think that I lust you no I don't. Not at all but you're something that attracted my devil.

You're my obsession, my most prized possession, maybe my love as well but the thing is I can't let you go away from me neither can I Share you with anyone. If for that I need to take you away from everything and everyone then that's fine with me.

But you my butterfly engrave this thing very carefully that you're mine and until you die you will be mine. "Aaryav told her and by this time she is scared

Her smart mouth could not form a sentence.

She is scared of him of his psychotic side.

" Why? Why are you doing this? See I'm your younger brother's fiance. We love each other. We are about to get married. Please let me go. They will be tense for me." Turvi pleaded calmly

She knows screaming or making him angry isn't going to work here.

Hearing her Aaryav started to laugh loudly.

" Who will be tense for you butterfly? People don't get tensed for dead people. And about engagement I can't see any engagement ring on your finger and about the marriage you were about to get married. You are not married so it's fine totally." Aaryav said and Turvi looked at her finger

No ring is present there.

" What do you mean by dead? And where is my ring? "Turvi asked

" You're such a dimwit. Anyways here see this. " saying he show her his phone

" Aashank Raichand's fiance died in a car accident and her body was burnt totally. " Turvi read it aloud

The article is published 5 days back

Aaryav took the phone from her and looked at her teary face.

He wiped her tears but she pushed him away from herself.

" Don't touch me you psychotic bastard. What did I do to get this fate? Hell I never did anything to you. Then why are you after me? You're sick. You need mental treatment.

You make everyone believe that I'm dead

So they won't look for Me. You moron, leave me, I want to go back. You are such a shameless person who kidnapped his own brother's fiance. "Turvi screamed

She has lost her mind completely. Her accident has taken a toll on her already and now this.

" Are you sure that you didn't do anything? Can you say it confidently that you didn't do anything? Think hard butterfly think hard. And whenever I say that I'm mentally fit? I'm fucked up in my brain and I will suggest you to not fucking test my patience.

I know you were my brother's fiance but you became mine the day you kissed me. That day you marked me as yours and changed my hatred for you into something else, something more dangerous, maybe love or worse obsession.

And about taking my brother's woman then I will say I'm walking on my father's steps nothing else. History really repeats itself. Get ready because tomorrow we will get married and believe me any kind of tantrum or drama from your side the result won't end well.

I will kill you but never let you go remember this. Now I will send someone with food and clothes to eat and behave. "Aaryav said and left her alone in tears and pain

# Chapter 42 the Failed Escape

Turvi's pov

What the hell is going on? How the hell everything changed in a blink of eye?

I can't believe what ever happened here.

That pshycotic bastard claimed me as his fucking his.

My life turned upside down in one day.

Everyone is thinking that I'm dead. They won't even search for me.

Oh god where I'm struck?

This man is not normal, he is sick and he is dangerous.

He doesn't give empty threats and can do anything with me because I'm at his mercy.

Is it now my life? Being his prisoner? And be his fucking submissive wife?

No ways! It can't be like this. I will fight him till I can.

I will escape from here. I just need a chance.

Yes I have to escape and contact stuti or Aashu.

I won't marry him. never!

I have to do something.

Suddenly a girl came inside with food and clothes in her hand.

She looked a little older than me.

"Mistress your food and clothes." she said looking down

She helped me in changing my clothes because I couldn't.

"Listen please help me. He has kidnapped me and held me hostage without my will please help me to escape." I begged her joining my hands in front of her

"Mistress, I will highly advise you don't even try to think about escaping because you can't. Two reasons: first we all are on the master's private island and second the minute you step out from here he will know. His men will find you even before you leave the mansion. And after they master will

torture you but he will directly kill Me. He is ruthless and doesn't care about anything. So please for your and my safety don't think about this and accept your fate. "She said

She is clearly lying. That man is maybe rich but not rich to own a freaking private island and how will he kill anyone?

He isn't a killer, he is a businessman.

" You're right. "I told her as I saw the lamp at night stand

" I'm sorry but I have to do this. "saying I hit her on her head making her senseless

I have to escape from here before he comes back.

I removed the IV from my hand and got up from the bed.

My legs felt weak and wobbly but I can't stop now.

Because stopping means being captured by him.

I looked at the window and to my relief I'm on the ground floor and easily slip out from the window.

Bearing the pain I get out from the window and my feet land on sand.

Sand? Where the fuck are we?

I don't have time to think that the area is clear so I walked ahead but it's all sand here.

It's dark but the lights are there to brighten the dark road.

I can hear the noise of the sea . Are we really on an island or what?

I walked ahead and found its sea. And the other side is filled with forest.

The mansion is in the middle.

"Enjoying the view butterfly?" I heard his voice and turn around to find him standing there folding his hands on his chest and giving a deadly smirk

You're dead Turvi he will kill you now.

"Do you think it's that easy hitting the maid and sneaking out from the window? I mean come on butterfly why will I choose this easy security for you?" he asked and I mentally face palmed myself for my stupidity

It was a trap a fucking trap.

He walked towards me but I stood there rooted on my spot.

" she warned you about it didn't she? Then why didn't you listen to her butterfly? Now she has to die because of your mistake, such a shame as the first day of mistress and you got a maid killed." He mocked Me and I widen my eyes in horror

He won't kill her will he?

" you won't kill her you can't, "I said

"And why do you think so? Didn't she tell you that I'm a mafia king butterfly? Killing is my daily business and for your information my brother is also in this business. So nothing is impossible for us. Now as you failed in my test of obedience you have to bear the punishment" He said dangerously smiling at me and hold my hand

I felt a little prick and everything became dark.

I woke up and felt myself tied on a chair.

What the hell? How did I come here?

Then everything crashed on my mind what ever happened and how I ended up here like this.

But wait, why am I in this dark room? It's not the room where I was previously

"So my queen has woken up from her beauty sleep already I see. Now let's talk about your punishment." He said calmly

Why the fuck he is calm? From the time I came he isn't angry but he is fucking cool as ice and that's scaring the shit out of me.

"Are you really in the mafia?" I asked him to divert his mind from this so called punishment

My body can't take much pain because I'm already in pain. I will do anything to get away from it.

"Yes I'm the king of Indian mafia and you are my queen. And yes my brother is also in this. He is my right hand. So bad that he never told you about his profession. He evaporated from your life for a few days then came back again right? Don't you wanna know where he was? "he asked me

Do I really want to know? He again cheated me. My gut feeling was right. He hid this big information from me.

" you're a murderer. You all are inhuman. I just hate you. Your brother cheated me again and again and you let's not talk about you. You all are fucking selfish" I told him because I don't want to know about Aashu

" OK I got it you don't want to know but still I will tell you. He was out for missions and by missions I mean killing sprees. He is a killing machine he enjoys killing very much you see. More

than Me. I like to torture and he likes to finish it off. And now I will show a little demo of my torture" he said and few people came inside with the girl whom I hit and ran.

"you see she was supposed to take care of you and keep you under check but she couldn't so here we go with her punishment." He said and the men left

He opened a bottle or something that had some liquid

If I'm not wrong it's kerosene. Oh no is he planning to burn her or what?

" you're correct butterfly. I'm going to burn her and you're the one who will light her body. "He said and came towards me

I shook my head in no I won't do that I can't. I'm not a monster.

" You won't? "he asked

" No. "I replied

" Hmm if you won't light her then I will ask you to cut off your legs. Will it be good? Yeah it might be good your legs won't be an obstacle later . "He said and I shivered hearing that

I'm feeling only hatred for him along with fear. This man is walking terror.

" choose wisely butterfly either you lit her body or I will cut your legs. The choice is yours. And yes I didn't hurt you because your body is already bruised you can't take more that's why and tomorrow you have to be in your sense as tomorrow is our wedding. So I will numb your legs and cut them off "He said with a creepy smile

Like I will marry him.. But what should I do?

I can't let him cut my legs nope not at all.

I am maybe a good person but not so good that I will give up on my legs and become paralysed forever.

I'm sorry because of me you have to die. Please forgive me but I am helpless. I can't do anything about it.

" I will light her body so please don't cut my legs. You are making me hate you more than I do Aaryav. You're making me a murderer and I won't forgive you for that ever." I told him

"I don't need that as well. I don't need your fucking forgiveness" He said and untied me

He took me near the girl and I did what I never even dreamt about. I killed an innocent girl.

Her body caught fire in seconds and I only could see and shed tears.

"Now we are equal butterfly. Like me you're also a murderer and selfish. You killed an innocent girl to save yourself my bad i thought that you will choose to save her anyways your legs are safe for now it seems" he said and it's true I became a murderer tonight

# Chapter 43 His pov part 1

Mature content ahead

Aaryav's pov (finally)

"boss the spy is here. Ms. Salvatore's men caught her" my one of best men said

"and what were you all doing that her men had to catch the spy? " I asked him with a blank expression on my face

"boss actually they tried but they failed as the spy is really cunning. We didn't even think that she could be the spy. He was giving information about Aashank sir to our rivals. But now everything is under control." He finished and I shot him in the middle of his eyes

He fell on the floor with a thud and his blood spread all over the marble making it look dirty.

" boss! "Zubair my third in command of my gang said

I'm their leader, their king. I rule over Indian mafia.

" clear this mess before I come back visiting that bitch who dared to double cross me. Anyways he was a worthless man who couldn't do the work he was assigned to do. So he doesn't deserve to live. "I told him and he nodded mutely

I walked out from my room and go in the basement where the girl is already half dead from the torture my men did on her.

" Misha Agnihotri right? Asim Agnihotri's wife? Whom I killed mercilessly 2 years back? But how are you alive? If I remember correctly I order my men to kill you." I asked her

"your men aren't heartless like you Aaryav Raichand. They could not just kill a heavily pregnant woman who just lost her husband and was in labour pain. But their leniency on me cost you a lot I see." she said smirking

She is half dead, beaten, tied and importantly on my mercy still she has the nerve to smirk at me she taunt me

" hmm you were pregnant. So tell me what is it? A boy or a girl? Where is she or he? Oh my bad how will you tell me where is she or he? When the baby died after birth." I said in a fake hurt tone

Her face looks like she will cry any moment now. I know where to hit so it will pain more.

" so sad he or she has to pay for their father's deed. If he didn't backstab me by trying to give my illegal work information to the police then he and the baby would be alive but what to do the deed is already done. It must be hurting na? To stay without them? Don't worry I will send you to them but not before I have some fun with you. "I told her

" my husband was an honest man whom you trapped and then killed. And yes kill me I failed to do my job so it's better that I die I could not take my revenge. "she screamed and winced when I slapped her hard

" never ever scream at me , woman. Aaryav Raichand never bears his insult or anything. And women are only allowed to scream for their husband in bed when they are satisfying their husband other then they have to be silent. And talk when their husband permits them to talk. Now as you broke another rule now it's punishment time. "saying I slapped her again and again until she fainted

My men are watching me silently they know better then say or interrupt me

" splash ice cold water on her. "I barked at my men and they obliged me immediately

Misha gasped as the cold water hit her body.

" Wake up sleeping beauty it's not time to sleep you see. It's time for punishment. "I told her with my famous Sadistic smile

Yes I'm a sadist and I'm proud of it but the thing is i don't follow any rules and regulations. I made my own rules and regulations.

My men hang her upside down and

I took a whip and whipped her for like 30 times and after it again I poured cold water on her body.

She is now begging me to kill her but how can I?

That's not my style of work.

"I will kill you Misha but when I feel like it." I told her and my men to sprinkle chilli powder along with Salt on her body..

Her screams are like music for me. I enjoyed every bit of it.

But now her screaming is bothering me very much.

"I'm done with playing with her. Now throw her in the pond of my hungry Sharks, she should be used by them at least. And yes make sure you cut her legs and hands before throwing her there but she should not die when you cut her ok she should be alive." I told my men who nodded and took her

Now I have to take shower . My clothes are dirty now so are my hands.

I go in my room and find it neat and clean with no traces of that dead body of that bastard.

I wash away her traits from my body.

I wore my clothes and went outside to see the annoying woman here again.

How did she know that I'm on my private island?

Oh her men found that girl hmm that explains how she knows my whereabouts.

"What are you doing here Ms. Salvatore?" I asked her without bothering to greet her

"no hi or hello Aaryav? I'm hurt." she said with a fake hurt and I rolled my eyes

"Mr. Raichand it's Mr. Raichand for you no one can call me by my name no one and you're basically no one to me except my business partner so be in your limits." I told her as I took my seat

"oh come on Aaryav don't be so cold. And I want to be your everything, it's you who isn't ready to give me that place. You didn't even notice what I'm wearing right now, did you Aaryav?" she asked me and yes I didn't noticed what is she wearing because I didn't let my eyes wonder on her body

It's a sin to look at other women who aren't yours.

And I'm very punctual in this thing. I don't think or look at other men's women and I don't find my kind of woman so I'm still single at the age of 34 and this girl here Bethany wants to marry me. Like I will.

"I am wearing a saree Aaryav only for you. I am dressed as you like. I am ready to change myself for you more than Aaryav I even did. I changed myself completely. Only for you. Just accept me." she said again her same old thing

This girl doesn't understand that I'm not interested in a girl like her.

" Ms. Salvatore, how many times do I need to tell you that I don't like you nor will I ever. So stop wasting both of our times and thank you for helping my men out. The payment will reach on time now excuse me I need to leave." I told her as I got a text that my private jet is here

I need to leave for India and meet my younger brother and my only Family Aashsank.

Who is my second in command as well and has a huge legal property that he earned by himself.

I have to make sure that he is safe and have to tell him about his new mission as well.

"You keep rejecting me Aaryav and get happiness right? I will pray to God to send some girl who will reject you so you can understand my pain and I will be happy that day. One day a girl will come into your life, Aaryav Raichand, who will change everything." Bethany said

" you know what I want to happen, at least I will get my perfect wife. And even if she rejects me then it's my job to make her accept me by hook or crook because if I found her once I ain't letting her go no matter what happens. Goodbye Ms. Salvatore "I said and left

After reaching India I decided to meet him first.

I need to make sure that he is fine.

Zubair is driving towards my hotel in this city.

I have many hotels in many places in India that's a part of my legal business along with the A & A academy that my mother started. These are my legal businesses that have nothing black in them.

I was checking my emails when suddenly zubair stopped the car.

"What happened Zubair?" I asked when I heard a feminine voice very sweet but it has anger and fire in it and that's ruined the sweetness

Oh hello, andhe ho kya? Aankhen hai ya button? Dikhta nahi hai ki red signal hai. (Oh hello, are you blind? Are they your eyes or button? Can't you see it's the red signal?)" that girl screamed.

Zubair goes outside to deal with her.

"Hey girl, I'm not at fault , this old hag is not watching where he was going," zubair told the girl

"And how are you not at fault? You broke traffic rules." she argued back not wanting to back out at any cost

Why can't she just back out when she knows she can't win? A girl should never try this kind of thing.

And picking up fights not at all.

"Listen don't make it a big issue and move aside." zubair told her

"Zubair gave her some money and closed the matter." I told zubair so the matter can be closed

This girls do this drama for money only otherwise they has no reason to create scene

She came towards the car and looked at me. I could see her clearly but she couldn't.

She has a very beautiful face very much but her character isn't beautiful at all and not to mention her dress it's not even covering her knees well.

These modern girls and their bodies are showing clothes. Always trying to get attention from men and I hate this kind of girl.

"Listen here Mr. Richy rich I don't fucking need your money. Do I look like a beggar to you? This road isn't your dad's so you better mind that." she screamed at me

Nerve that girl and disrespected me. No one ever dares to disrespect me and here she is doing the same.

There is an another girl with her who said something to her and she nodded

"If I wasn't getting late then I would have shown you what I'm for real. Bloody rich bastards." she cursed me again and make that old man cross road

"Zubair sits inside and drives now." I screamed at him

Anger is evident in my voice and why won't it be? I'm very much angry.

Zubair came inside and started the car immediately.

I am letting you go because you are quite young and unaware of what you did but if I saw again then you are gone.

# Chapter 44 his pov part 2

Aaryav's pov continues

We reached my hotel where I got a welcoming atmosphere. They welcomed me like the way they should after all I'm the owner of this fucking hotel.

"sir, your suite is ready for your stay." the manager of the hotel said and I nodded

He showed me the way and left after I'm in my suite.

"Zubair bring Aashank here. I have already told him that I'm here." I told Zubair

"Yes boss," he replied and left

I will meet my little brother after such a long time. We met 3 months ago because of my work and his own security.

Some fuckers are behind him to get me but they don't know that he is no less than Lucifer himself...

They know about his existence but not his appearance.

And moreover He doesn't need any protection or anything but still I prefer him undercover to save him from my enemies till I can after all he is my responsibility my only family left.

And he doesn't oppose me because he also wants this. He wants to live a bit normally with the girl he loves.

Yeah you heard it correct he love a girl and the funny thing is that I even don't fucking know who is that girl or even her name.

He has hid her from me very well and respecting his privacy I never meddle in his personal life.

Once he tells me by himself about her then I will do my research work on her.

The girl who ever is has wrapped my cold hearted brother in her pinky.

But I just hope she is a perfect wife material and just like the way she should be not a gold digger bitch or something. Aashank knows that and I hope he has not forgotten it.

I decided to freshen up until my brother showed up.

After changing my clothes again I checked some emails

Both my mafia work and legal business work has been making my days too busy.

Once Aashank finishes his college I'm going to hand over half of the business to him by announcing him as my brother in front of the media.

The knock on the door took me out of my thoughts.

"come in" I said and aashank and Zubair came inside

I got up from the bed to just land on the bed again because my brother just hugged me too tight and with force that we both landed on the bed.

"I missed so freaking much bhai. But you didn't missed me at all right?" he asked after sometime

He is such a baby when it comes to me.

No one will say that he is the same killing machine who kills without thinking its result.

"that's not the truth baby brother and you know it. I was busy with my work and that's why I didn't contact you." I told him as I pat his back and smiled

He got up and pouted.

"come on baby brother don't be angry. Now tell me did you propose that doll face of yours?" I asked him and his cheeks tinted pink slightly

Did my brother just fucking blushed?

Oh Devil this girl has surely fucked him bad.

"no bhai not yet but after 2 weeks on our fare well I will propose to her and I know she will accept me. She loves me and that's visible in her eyes.

She thinks I don't understand her feelings or can't read her eyes, what a silly girl she is." He kept talking about her dreamily

I have to meet this girl very soon and have to see what she has that my brother is swooning over her.

" That's nice once she accepts your proposal and gives an intro of her to me. "I said and noticed the change in his expression..

" what happened? "I asked him

" nothing. By the way why are you here again? You definitely have not come to meet me. "He said raising his eyebrows

" you're right I'm here for some deals that I'm going to do in Wolf. And I will check on the clubs as well. It's been a long time since I 've paid any visit there. And I have to attend the competition in

your college as well. You know about it right? So I will be staying here for 2 weeks or so "I told him and he nodded

" so what is that mission you were talking about? "he asked and I smirked impatient I see

" You have to go to Italy and find those bastards and end them. None should be spared. "I told him and he grinned like a Cheshire cat

He really loves killing.

" Thanks bhai I was getting mad as I couldn't kill someone. But now I have a good opportunity, "he said

" OK then leave today only. The sooner you go the sooner you will come back. "I told him

" what a great way to kick your brother out isn't it? " he taunted

" Just a few months then you can stay with me in our mansion. "I told him

" yeah like you stay there for long. "he said and rolled his eyes

" whatever I have already made arrangements for you. So be on time. And don't disappoint me "I told him in a serious tone

He knows it's his boss talking, not his brother.

" I won't disappoint you boss. "He said in same serious tone and left but not before attacking me with another hug

I look at Zubair who isn't very happy with me sending Aashank to Italy.

" Zubair spilled the beans already. "I told him

" boss do you think it's a good idea to send aashank boss Italy alone? You should have sent me with him as well. He is still young. "He said and i know why he is saying this

He also loves him like his brother.

" Aashank is maybe young but he has the same blood I have. He Is also fucked up like me. He is maybe different from me but when it comes to spilling blood we both are the same. Don't worry about him, he will be back soon." I told him and he nodded

Days passed and today is the day when I have to go and attend the programme in Aashsank's college.

Aashsank came back 5 days ago but didn't join his college because he was bruised up a bit. So he needs time to be normal so no one will say anything about it.

The programme is boring as fuck. I really hate this kind of thing but what I have to do is what my mother used to do.

The programme was going fine as I was doing my work in the middle but everything changed when a certain person came on the stage.

Turvi Ahuja. Unique name

I look up to see who it is and my blood boiled.

She is the same girl who insulted me.

So her name is turvi and she studies in this college only.

I just hope she has no connection with my brother.

I watched her dance keenly and I must say she is a graceful dancer.

She has talent and a very beautiful face but not a beautiful tongue for you.

Her tongue is sharp as a butcher knife.

I shook my head and asked my PA who was watching keenly every performance and he said that Turvi is best among them and she won.

I wanted to say no but I didn't. I work with some ethics and I won't snatch her rights because of personal grudges against her.

When I was handing her prize to her she was ogling at me like other girls and that irritated me more.

I'm not your man girl don't ogle me. Your eyes are only for your man not for some stranger.

Nevertheless I hand her over her prize and congratulate her.

When our hands touched I felt a weird kind of feeling.

It's like a jolt of electricity passed through my body.

And I can see that she also felt that because she visibly flinched.

She left hurriedly from there and I also went down.

I wanted to leave but for some reason I wanted to see that girl turvi once.

Ahh! I am getting mad at what I'm even saying.

But I forgot everything when I saw her going out with another girl who is wearing a salwar suit but she! She is wearing a skirt that barely covers her skin. Does she want to attract men towards her?

I felt sudden rage thinking that some men will see her with lust. But why I don't know.

Unknown to me I started to follow her silently. I was behaving like a stalker that I'm obviously not.

I was about to come back when suddenly it started to raining she that girl started to dance in rain like peacock dance in rain

Her body was looking so fucking gorgeous and the rain has made her dress clung to her body and that's making her curves visible.

Suddenly she turned where I was but I was fast enough to hide.

What the fuck I'm doing or saying?

I am forgetting my own ethics of not seeing any woman who is not mine.

I was practically Eye raping that girl.

Oh my Devil forgive me.

She isn't my type, not from any angle; she is under that category of girls whom I hate very much.

A sudden rage bubbled inside me as I found another boy ogling at her.

I looked at her and found both girls leaving from there.

I don't know what got into me. I took out my gun and shot that boy directly in his heart and he fell down.

I felt calm a bit after killing him but this is not done. This girl is fucking with my brain.

Ms. Turvi Ahuja stay the fuck away from me because if I lost my control then I will end up killing you.

# Chapter 45 his pov part 3

Mature content ahead

Aaryav's pov continues

"The deal is sealed already Mr. Shukla, nothing will be changed or added." I told him

Mr. Shukla is new in this business and new people eat my brain more.

He wants to say something but my one glare and he knows better than opening his mouth.

"OK Mr. Raichand the deal is done then." He said and I nodded

Once he left I checked my phone for any texts or emails and got surprised when I found a text from Aashank that too asking me about my visit to clubs.

He never shows any interest in what I do or in my business until I involve him then why?

I called him directly to ask about it.

"hi bhai," he said after he received the call

"hello brother, what are you doing?" I asked him

"nothing just chilling out with my friends." He replied

"you mean your doll face and her sister?" I asked and got a hmm in reply

"So why do you want to know where I'm going to visit? you never asked me before?" I asked him clearly without beating around the Bush

I don't like to twist my words. I believe in clear words.

"I just wanted to know if you are visiting any clubs tonight or not. If you do, then I may go with you or something." He said

"no I don't have any plans to go anywhere tonight. I'm staying in my suite and doing some business deals." I told him my plan

"OK, no problem if you go anywhere then take me with you." He said and I hummed

"OK bhai I need to hang up now I will talk to you later. Bye." He said

"bye, and stay away from danger." I told him

"Yes bhai I know, I will stay away from every problem." He said and hung up

I checked other emails and replied to them.

I had a meeting with another client and it was good.

"Boss, we need to go wolf now. They are trying some new drugs without informing us." Zubair informed me and my blood boiled in anger

How the fuck they can do it that too without informing me?

That is my damn club and what I own everything happens there according to me.

They need some reality check it seems.

I and Zubair left from there and reached the wolf.

My one of the best clubs.

"sir you here suddenly?" the manager asked me as soon he spotted me in the vip area

He is sweating like a pig in fear.

"why? do I need to take your permission to visit my own club?" I asked him raising my eyebrows

"no sir not at all. It's your club you can come anytime you want to." He said

"I want to check on everything, show me around." I told him and he nodded

"but before that I want to have some drinks." I told him and he panicked a bit

"sure sir I will ask someone to bring what will you like to have?" he asked me

"I will go and take by myself from the bar area." I told him and send Zubair to the bar area

He bought two drinks and as I thought they are spiked with drugs.

"Mishra did I give permission to test drugs on the teens by mixing it in their cocktails? Did I allow it?" I asked him

and her started to shake in fear

"Sir I. I don't know what you are talking about." He said and I showed him my gun

"Mishra you know that more than me my gun talks with people don't you? Are you going to accept it or not?" I screamed at him and just peed in his pants

Fuck!

"I'm sorry sir please don't kill me. I became greedy but I swear I will not do anything like this again." He pleaded like the pathetic shit he is

"You know Mishra what I do with my preys don't you? After all you're working for me for such a long time." I told him as I swayed my gun

"Zubair ties him and takes him in the basement." I told Zubair

"please sir, please leave me. I am sorry. I won't go this ever again." He pleaded

"you won't be alive to do this ever again" I said and shot him on his both legs so he can't run away

"take him." I told Zubair who followed my orders

"boss your face has blood why don't you go and clean it?" Zubair said and I used my phone to look at my face and he is right

I need to wash my face.

"you go I'm coming." I told Zubair and walked inside the gents washroom where no one else is present

I washed my face and turned around to bump into someone. I hold the person to save him from fall.

Its the same girl Turvi Ahuja but what the fuck is she doing in gents washroom?

"Hey, what are you doing in the ladies ' washroom?" she asked me

Fuck she is highly drunk.

"you're in gents washroom" I told her and she did something I never expected

She threw up but thankfully not on me. I was lucky enough to avoid it otherwise I would be drenched in her vomit. She just passed out on my chest.

Fuck my life this girl is fucking beautiful walking trouble. What kind of girl is she?

Wearing this kind of dress and totally wasted is she waiting for someone fuck her or what?

Bloody slut!

I just Hate this kind of girl. Careless bitch!

If it's not me then any other man would have fucked the hell out of her here only.

I took her with me and decided to drop her inside the woman's washroom. Someone will surely help her.

I don't know why I'm feeling very much anger towards her for her carelessness.

I want to wake her up and give her a piece of mind.

What was she thinking before drinking this much?

Oh wait fuck she is drugged. Shit I should have thought about it.

Mishra you're so dead. You will die a pathetic death I promise you.

After making sure she is in some one's reach I left from there. While leaving I saw her friend from college.

Good she will now find her and take this beautiful walking trouble with her.

I went out and sat inside my car.

They club is outside of city so no problems

"where Is he?" I asked Zubair

"tied with car." he replied with a smirk

"give him a taste of his deeds Zubair." I told him and he started the engine

He makes sure to drag him in the road until he is half dead.

"stop now let's finish him in my style." I told him and he nodded

My men took him in the basement of the club.

Where I have my torture device. It's one of my favourite places.

"because of you many girls can be

raped. Many men can lose their precious possessions though they deserve that for coming in this kind of place in the first place but still I don't want any man losing his woman's innocence to some other bastard. So to show others what happened with the ones who betray me I will set an example. "saying I took a chopper and cut his legs and hands making him cry out in pain

And that gives me peace. Their cry and

scream of pain is music in my ears.

" see Mishra what I do with your body parts "saying I chopped his body parts in pieces and then I cut his dick off and shoved it in his asshole.

" leave him here like this and yes cut his tongue so we wont have many unnecessary problems. And yes send the video to others so they know what will happen if someone go against me. I'm the king Night Hunters I'm the lucifer and messing with me give you this. "I told Zubair who is done with making the video

My face and voice aren't visible or audible but acting are crystal clear.

Now they will get a warning and will think before double crossing me.

I go back to my hotel suite by the back door as I'm drenched in blood.

I didn't wash it there. I didn't want to. This is calming my devil down.

I go inside my room and removed my suit jacket but suddenly a clicking sound came

I looked at my jacket and found a butterfly bracelet attached with it.

Butterfly bracelet? My brain shows me that beautiful walking trouble face.

So it's her. I twirled the bracelet in my hand and it broke. Half Is with Me half is with her

She is indeed like this butterfly beautiful and attractive and just like a butterfly gets caught by a predator this girl will be caught by someone someday.

Third meeting and you're still a living butterfly after everything you're really lucky that I didn't kill you yet.

Wait, did I just call her butterfly? Fuck man she is fucking with my brain.

I need a shower to clean myself from everything.

I put the bracelet aside and enter in the washroom to wash the blood and that butterfly girl from my system

**********

Days passed and I finished my work here, now it's time to leave.

"Bhai, I have good news for you." Aashank said as he enter inside

"what good news?" I asked him though I can guess what it can be

"bhai my doll face accepted my proposal and today I told her about my billionaire identity as well." He said and I smiled at him

Finally my brother got her his love for whom he was waiting from so long.

"congratulations brother won't you show me her pictures now? Give me her introduction" I told him

"Yes bhai obviously I will. See her she is my doll face my love my Turvi. Her name is Turvi Ahuja." Aashank said and show me her pictures

What the fucking hell? How the fuck she can be his lover?

# Chapter 46 his pov part 4

Mature content ahead

Aaryav's pov continues

What the fucking hell? How the fuck she can be his lover?

"Aashank are you sure she is the girl you love?" I asked him to confirm

"Yes bhai she is the one and she is just like the way you approve. A shy and submissive girl." He said smiling

That mean that cunning bitch is lying about her character?

She trapped my brother?

But no that's not possible. Trapping aashank is not possible. He knows how to judge a person and it's not possible that he doesn't know anything about her.

Something is wrong here. Is aashank lying to me for this girl?

But how can my brother lie to me? He loves me very much and respects me but then love can do wonders to a person.

Either that girl is making him do this or he is doing it himself.

"Bhai, what happened? Why are you silent?" he asked me

I masked my emotions quickly. I had to check it by myself.

"nothing happened. She is really beautiful and a perfect girl. It seems I will like to meet her soon." I told him

"Yes bhai sure after our exams she will return home and then we will go there." He said with enthusiasm

"sure no problem. I hope she is what I want as your wife Aashsank." I told him

"obviously bhai she is that only. I know you never asked anything from me but only this so how can I not listen to you?" he asked me and I nodded

I have to know about this.

"you should go now it's not good for us to be together for long and I am also leaving today." I told him

"yeah bhai. Don't worry I will be back real soon." He said and hugged me

I trust you very much, aashank despite everything don't breaking my trust.

I left the city and got busy with my work.

**********

I am in my room holding the file about Turvi Ahuja.

She has an Interesting past it seems and the most interesting part is that my brother knows everything.

He lied to me on my face. My brother lied to me and what even I can expect from him after all blood is thicker than water.

Betrayal is in our blood.

But it's also possible that Turvi is manipulating him.

Possibles are many and answer only they can give.

Suddenly my phone rang and I saw the caller id it's Aashank.

"hello," I said

"bhai!" he said and by his voice I know that something is wrong

He is very angry and hurt all together.

"Aashank what happened?" I asked him

"that mother fucker Dared to attack my doll face bhai. He fucking send his dogs behind her and Stuti. And those dogs molested both." He said barely holding himself

"What do you want?" I asked him knowing what's coming

I will give those bastards a pathetic death no one messes with Raichands and get alive they dared to touch her ruin her they have to pay.

But why am I feeling like this? Why am I feeling this uncontrollable rage?

" I want his head bhai and a pathetic death of those dogs and I want you to kill them because I don't want them to give an easy death. They have dared to eye my love and my possession." He said and I smirked

"think work is done brother." I told him and he hummed

This is gonna be fun.

**********

3 dogs who tried to touch those girls are here in front of me badly bruised.

My men did a good job I see..

"please leave us sir we are local goons we just got order to rape and kill that girl. Please leave us." one of them begged like the pathetic fucker he is..

"tsk tsk tsk don't ask me to leave you. How can I? When you dared to mess with us? So sad you all have to suffer." I said in mocking tone

"you love to rape girls right? Now you will feel how it feels to be raped. To be touched and used without your will." I said and 3 men came inside

"These three are your prey, go ahead and enjoy your treat." I said and left from there

After 4 hours they came to me which means they are done.

I entered again there and found them lying on the floor.

"How are you feeling boys? Did you enjoy it?" I asked them but no answer came

"I asked something from you all." I screamed and they looked at me with fear

I like to see fear in their eyes for me.

"do you like rain boys?" I asked them

"don't make me repeat because that makes me angry and if I get angry then you don't know what I will do so reply to my questions." I told them

"do you like rain?" I asked again

"Yes," they replied

"good then you will surely like this." I said and lit the lamp and the place caught fire and soon hot wax started to drop on their body like rain making them scream bloody murder

"what happened aren't you liking this?" I mocked

"make sure they are covered in wax completely then scratch their body and again repeat this wax rain Until they die." I told my men who nodded their head

No one harms my butterfly and gets away easily.

Wait what the fuck I'm saying?

My butterfly? Like seriously?

Fuck my life I'm turning into a lunatic.

I go out from this torture room and inform Aashank about the punishment I give them.

And he is satisfied with it completely.

He is with me only tomorrow we will go to Turvi's House and there everything will be clear as daylight.

Next day

We have come to her house to talk about marriage but in reality I'm here to know the truth.

After knowing everything I will take steps.

She came down wearing a salwar suit fully covering her body.

Drama queens like she doesn't roam around in clothes that don't even cover her assets properly.

She gives me tea but I give her a stink eye.

She looked at my eyes for sometime then shook her head.

After this I started to question her again and saw that my brother was tense and shaking his head.

She questioned my answers quite wisely.

Everything was going fine but suddenly she came down wearing her normal good for nothing clothes.

And confessed that this is her real side. This is her.

She said the truth and I saw my brother.

And his look is saying that she is right, he is the one who asked her to lie.

She even said she won't marry aashank if I don't want to. She doesn't want to break our relationship.

I approved her for my brother because she is honest and not a gold digger for sure and really important for my brother.

If he can lie to me for her he can do anything for her.

I didn't like the fact that she called me bhaiya. I don't want her to call me bhaiya but she can't call me anything else as well.

I reminded her about her training in my academy.

When we left from there Aashank was trying to talk with me but I shut him off.

I'm really pissed off by this and I need to let my anger out on someone.

In my anger I texted her

"don't be so happy yet you have a long way ahead to go."

I don't know why I did but I did it.

"bhai I'm sorry please forgive me." Aashank said

"you broke my trust Aashank and don't blame me in future if I do the same." I told him in a tone that clearly slowed how pissed I'm.

After going from here I go to my mansion and directly go to the basement where I have my play toys.

All girls like Turvi disobedient and fiesty. I can't do anything to her so they are giving her proxy here.

I torture them as I wanted to torture Turvi.

That girl is making me insane. I'm myself confused with my emotions and my feelings.

One second I want to kill her on the other moment I want to make her mine but she is off limits.

She is making me break my own ethics and for that I want to punish her so badly.

I whipped these girls till they bleed and then locked them in the dark cold room.

Soon the day of Aashank's engagement came.

Today Turvi's sister is also getting engaged with an IPS officer.

And thankfully he has no idea about our illegal business. If he did then I would have to kill him to clear my path.

After the engagement she danced and proposed to him in front of everyone and I was feeling pure anger and hatred.

I don't know why but I could not see them together.

This girl is messing with me. She is fucking me up from the first day we meet.

I should have killed her before then it would have not happened.

I even broke a glass in my anger but thankfully no one noticed.

I was bearing everything for the sake of my brother but hell broke loose when she took my first kiss.

# Chapter 47 his pov part 5

Aaryav's pov continues

The next day of Aashsank's engagement I went to Melbourne for my work.

And this time it's a legal one as I have a chain of restaurants in Australia and the USA.

I needed to distract myself from everything because these things are affecting me badly.

1 week I spent there but decided to come back on Aashsank's birthday.

No matter how busy I'm but I never miss his birthday.

And this year I decided to give him a surprise.

I pretend like I don't remember his birthday and I'm also not coming back today.

He was sulking while talking to me but I didn't disclose my plan.

If it wasn't his birthday I would have stayed here for long because in my mansion Turvi is staying.

I want to avoid her and she is staying in my house only just great.

This girl is so fucking dangerous for my brain because I don't have a heart ane she is fucking with my brain.

I reached India on time and in the evening I returned to my mansion.

When I was entering inside I saw the backside of the mansion was dark.

It should not be dark here.

What the fuck is security doing?

I walked towards the back side and stopped when I felt someone's presence.

I took out my gun to shoot but suddenly I heard Turvi's voice wishing Aashsank happy birthday and the next moment she kissed me.

Fuck! I pushed her away as soon she touched my lips.

She kissed me thinking of me as Aashsank. She took my first kiss fucking hell!

Next moment the lights are on and we heard Aashsank's voice

He is oblivious of what ever happened here now.

And he should be like that only. I don't want to destroy my relationship with him for this girl.

We celebrated his birthday normally like nothing happened.

Turvi had planned a surprise for him, that's when I came.

Her face is screaming her inner thoughts well. Aashank couldn't notice but I could.

I have to talk with her about this kiss thing.

I don't know why but I don't want him to know and after this kiss I'm feeling something weird.

Something really strange and that's not good.

She took my first kiss and I'm feeling possessive over her.

Oh devil I'm getting mad.

After dinner she left hurriedly and we also left.

Sometimes later I went to meet her and there we had a big argument.

This girl has a very sharp tongue and I don't like that.

No one talked over me but she did. She was arguing with me until I decided to show her what can be the consequences of this when Aashsank came abruptly.

I told her in my way that it's better to shut up.

She made a fake story that she is missing her cousin and my brother said he will bring her cousin here to meet her.

He is totally whipped in her love and behaving like a puppy.

I left from there and came back to my room.

Dam you Turvi Ahuja you're exactly what I fucking Hate so much.

You don't know by this you're just tempting my inner devil to tame you because I hate disobedience.

I made a drink for myself and drank it in one breath.

After drinking a little bit I decided to sleep.

But in my sleep also that girl didn't leave my mind.

Next morning in breakfast table Aashank gifted Turvi somethings and I got to know that she is obsessed with butterfly

After having my breakfast I left and came back in the evening only to find Stuti Turvi's cousin.

And once again we both engaged in a verbal clash. You're doing very wrong Turvi don't do this don't bring your doom by your own.

I left from there leaving them behind.

And sometimes later she came into my room and apologized to me and left.

She was looking a little bit scared and to be honest I fucking loved that. The fear in her eyes is giving me happiness.

I want to see this fear in her eyes for me.

I think I'm becoming obsessed with her. Her feisty nature and sharp tongue has poke my devil again and again from the start and now my devil wants her to be tamed.

Yes I concluded this only from whatever I'm feeling that I'm obsessed with her and want to tame her wildness and make her what exactly I want her to be.

I know she is my brother's fiance but snatching away the love of your brother isn't anything new in our family and we both have that blood only and with blood betrayal run inside us.

He betrayed me once for her and now I will do the same by snatching her from him.

The same story will be repeated again but I will make sure that we won't end up like them.

It's true that history repeats itself and that's what is happening here…

But to get her I have to plan everything calmly.

She is in love with him and she won't Come to me ever on her own so I have to trick her and others.

"Never let go of the person you think is made for you if needed use force manipulate but still don't let go."

The words echoed in my mind.

And I do think she is made for me totally opposite of my liking but yet I'm obsessed with her.

We have a ball to attend and I will make sure that she comes as my date. And I know how to do that well.

Suddenly I got a call from Bethany now what the fuck she wants?

"hello," I said after receiving the call

"hii, Aaryav how are you?" she asked

"It's Mr. Raichand for you Ms. Salvatore and I'm positive that you didn't call me for this obviously. So speak what is the reason for this call." I told her clearly

"As you know tomorrow is a ball and I'm invited as well so why don't we go together? I'm sure you don't have a date." she said and I rolled my eyes

This girl doesn't know how to take a No as No.

"who said I don't have any Date? I have my date to go with me and maybe she will be my wife as well in near future. So if you don't have to say anything else then I'm hanging up. Good night." saying I hung up

Now she will understand that I'm not interested in her not at all.

The ball day came and as I expected she is looking breathtaking in this outfit.

She is beautiful nah scratch it she is gorgeous no doubt in that.

No wonder my brother is head over heels for her.

I took her with me in a separate car where Stuti is with Aashank in another car.

She is silent and just checking her phone. I don't like to be ignored but no problem soon you will be only paying attention to me and don't even think to ignore me for once.

I was only looking at her and savouring her beauty very soon I will cage you my butterfly.

We reached the party and I did something that I never did before I danced with her.

Yes I kind of forced her but that's OK.

After the dance she and Stuti go to the washroom.

I and aashank both are talking with our business allies.

Finally I have announced Aashsank as my brother publicly so everyone wants to meet him.

After talking we both were in the bar area drinking when suddenly my butterfly came and asked about Bethany and she even drank alcohol as well.

How dare she? Doesn't she know that woman doesn't drink?

But what I was even expecting she drinks and I have witnessed that with my own eyes.

She wanted an explanation but she was already drunk.

She didn't take some strong alcohol means her alcohol tolerance isn't good at all.

We decided to leave the party and sat inside the cars.

She was laughing and arguing like a kid and to be honest I liked her this side a little..

She even said that I look good when I smile.

But I got angry when she said what that bitch Bethany said to her.

She dared to insult my butterfly for her petty reasons and jealousy.

She has to pay for this. I will make sure that she does.

My mood changed listening to her and I really wanted to laugh when she asked me that am I a gay?

She would have never said that if she was in her senses.

I just patt her head and asked her to sleep and she listened to me like an obedient girl and I really liked that.

Now Bethany Salvatore is ready to be punished for your deadly mistakes.

You should not have done this Bethany not this now you will pay.

# Chapter 48 his pov part 6

Slight Mature content

Aaryav's pov continues

"hello Bethany," I said as soon she received my call

"hello, Aaryav is it you?" she asked and I rolled my eyes

Obviously it's me bitch not my ghost.

"of course it's me Bethany. Why do you think it's someone else?" I asked her as sweetly I can

"you called me and took my name for the first time. That's why I'm shocked." she replied

"yeah actually I realised something and want to meet you. Can you meet me now alone? I don't want your lap dogs to follow you." I told her

"really? What did you realise?

OK I'm coming just tell me the address I will be there." she said as I expected her to say

"I will text you the address just meet me there now." I told her and hung up

Let's the game begin.

I have been waiting for her for 5 minutes but she isn't here yet. Just come once Bethany.

"Aaryav" she called my name and I turn around to find her in a pathetic excuse of saree

"finally you came. I want to say something." I told her as I go near her and pulled her towards me by her waist

"you're looking so beautiful tonight." I told her but in reality she is looking like a slut

She called my butterfly slut right? now I will see what she will call herself.

"I am always beautiful Aaryav it's you who doesn't look at me properly." she said

Self obsessed bitch!

"Bethany I like you. I understand that no one is better than you for me. You even changed yourself for me because you love me ." I told her and unpinned her saree and she didn't protested and let the pallu fall down

Just great. She proved what kind of girl she is.

A girl who serves herself to any man is a pure loose character woman and I hate them.

"I'm all yours Aaryav take me, make me yours." she slurred like a slut

"but before we start let's do something interesting ." I told her and she looked at me confused

You call my butterfly slut right now I will see what you do.

"what?" she asked

"this" i showed her the injection and she looked at me

"what is this Aaryav?" she asked scared

"nothing just for some fun" I said but she started to wiggle out so I have to force her.

I injected her with ecstasy and that's it my work is done here.

"ouch! What did you inject me with ?" she asked me tensed

"nothing baby just relax." I told her and took her in another room where my men are waiting for her

"she is all yours boys make sure you satisfy her fully. She is a needy bitch!" I says and throw her on bed

The drug is strong to knock her out in seconds.

"and yes don't forget to shoot the whole video. Everything should be there and most importantly her face should be clear. Fuck her like the slut she is. She called your future queen slut make sure she knows what that word means." I told them

"don't worry boss the work will be done we will fuck her like a whore. She won't be able to walk on her own for days." one of them replied and I smirked

My work is done. I went back to the mansion and slept peacefully.

Next morning as I thought my butterfly interrogated Aashsank about Bethany and he told her the truth.

I can see the distress on her face clearly because of that bitch.

Don't worry butterfly I take care of her.

With that I remember that I have to check on her.

She had a long night yesterday.

After breakfast I left and went there to find her crying under the duvet and my man had a worried look.

"what happened?" I asked them in my serious voice

"Boss, she was a virgin before." He said and I looked at Bethany who is glaring at me with pure hatred

"OK you all can go." I told them and they left

"Why did you do it, Aaryav? Why? I loved you. I was ready to give myself to you but what did you do? You make me raped by 5 men? You didn't care for anything? I was a virgin Aaryav and I wanted to give it to you because I love you but now I hate you. Aaryav Raichand I hate you. I will tell the whole world about your true self. "she screamed and I looked at her with a bored expression

" done barking? See Bethany I had no problem with you I never had until you bad mouthed my butterfly my queen. You called her a slut and how can I let you go away without punishment? And you only know their half punishment is not full yet. I can only think what you will do after knowing this. "I told her with a fake concern

" What did you do, Aaryav? "she asked me scared

" you know what I did? I made a film of your adventure and leaked it on every porn site and social media. It's viral already. After all, who would not like to see it? And the best thing is I send it to your father. And do you know no one will belive that its rape because you're moaning and reacting like a horny bitch. You were willing to participate. Wanna know why? Because I drugged you. But again you can't prove anything. What will happen to your father after this? He is maybe in illegal work but he loves his daughter very much. How much hurt will he be to see this? You should not have messed with Bethany. You called her a whore and I made you one. And I hope you enjoyed last night "I told and watched her crying

Just like my butterfly was crying because of her.

" you're a monster Aaryav how could you do it? How? "she screamed

" shh! Bethany don't scream I don't like that you know it right? And yes I'm a monster. I was like this, I'm like this and I will be like this in the future only. "I told her

" you did it because of that girl right? She doesn't love you Aaryav she fucking loves your younger brother. I just bad mouthed her because I was angry with you. Her eyes hold love for Aashsank not for you. I will tell her first about this and then I will see how she marries you. Let your brother also know what his brother Dearest is planning. You have ruined my life already and I know dad won't

do anything against you because he isn't that powerful to take you down. I have nothing to lose you already destroyed everything but now I will destroy you. "she screamed and I smirked

You should not have threatened me with this Bethany.

" I thought to be a little considerate and let you go alive but no it seems that you have a death wish.

Bethany Salvatore was found dead in her hotel room where she was staying.

Reason she could not bare the thing that her intimate video is leaked and viral out of shame she commited suicide.

Tomorrow's headlines of the news.

Sounds interesting?

Bye bye Bethany we will meet again in hell because none of us will go to heaven. "saying I shot her 6 times

Her blood splatter on me but I don't mind it.

Blood fascinates me. I love the red color very much.

Whoever will try to snatch her from me will have the same fate as her.

Be it my brother or my butterfly herself.

I did everything cleverly so my butterfly won't know anything about this.

She is staying away from me and mostly avoiding me.

I didn't do anything to let her enjoy a bit of her life until I put her in my cage.

I had hired someone to follow her when she was outside the mansion.

Soon the time of her return came as her course was finished and her sister was also getting married.

After her marriage I will work on my plan.

I don't want her to miss her sister's marriage.

Everything was fine but when I got a picture of her kissing my brother my blood boiled.

How can they do it? I wanted to kill my brother I can't. He is my brother and I have promised papa that I won't do anything until he betrays me and here technically he didn't betray me.

She is his fiance and he can kiss her but not for long.

I have decided what to do.

After Stuti's marriage I will take her away from everyone and everything. For the world she has to die so I can cage her.

Days passed and everything was good but then suddenly aashank decided to marry her in court only.

He told me about her parents and I swear I wanted to kill them but I can't kill my in-laws right? They can come handy later.

So I had to execute my plan sooner than I thought.

I planned her accident on the day of the wedding. I told aashank that I'm in some important work. I can't join him and he understands that.

Once the truck hit her car I took her out and out a girl like her inside. I removed the engagement ring and made her wear it. And it perfectly fit her as well.

I took my butterfly away from here first. I made sure she was alright then I took her to my private island. We will stay here until I break her completely down and then reform her as I please.

5 days she was unconscious and in between I checked on aashank as well. I have to give my fake sympathy to him.

No one doubts anything and for them butterfly will be dead.

I knew that she wouldn't be easy and I was right.

On the very first day I had to slap her.

I didn't like it but I have to do it.

Later I tested her if she would have passed. I would have given her freedom to roam here and there but now she has to disappoint me again and try to elope.

I wanted to torture her so much for trying to escape but she can't take it.

Her body is weak and she needs to be stable for our wedding and wedding night.

When she called me a murderer criminal an evil idea popped into my mind.

So I give her choice. And she saved herself and that surprised me. I thought she would save that girl but no she didn't. And here she proved she is different and I will love to change her and break her bit by bit. Though I wanted her to chose the girl so I can cut her legs but never mind.

Tomorrow is our wedding and I will make sure from tomorrow only she behaves herself.

# Chapter 49 lost Hopes

Turvi's pov

Dead that's what I'm feeling right now. I can't believe that I killed a girl technically I didn't but indirectly I did.

He killed that girl because I dared to run away from him even after knowing that I can't run.

It's just because of my stupidity.

Yes I'm guilty but at least my legs are safe.

I am not a Saint who will give up on her life for others no. That's not me but it doesn't mean that I don't feel bad about it.

I'm lying on the bed in the room where I woke up earlier.

He has dropped me here and asked to sleep as tomorrow we are getting married like that will ever happen.

I can't marry that psychopath bastard no matter what and now I am also not sure what I think or feel about Aashank.

He hides this from me that he is linked to the mafia . I forgive him from hiding his identity but can I forgive him for this?

Now I think that loving him is the biggest mistake that I made.

Because loving him threw me here in that devil's cage.

My body is in pain and my head is also aching.

I don't want to sleep but my body is screaming for sleep and I surrender to my body.

I dozed off with a hope that when I wake up next it all will be okay.

Next morning

"Butterfly , wake up!" I heard someone calling me and a hand caressed my cheeks

The touch Is so gentle and soft and feels good on my skin.

"Go away let me sleep." I told who ever is there

"Oh my sweet butterfly I would have loved you to let you sleep more but can't. Today is our wedding. So wake up now." That person said and bells rang in my head

I open my eyes and an ear piercing scream left from my mouth.

I pushed that bastard away from me as he was hovering over me.

What the fuck is he doing here?

Suddenly all the images from last night came in my vision and I shivered.

Fuck that's all are true nothing is a dream.

My thinking session abruptly broke when I felt a sting on my right cheek and in impact my head turn towards my left side.

He fucking slapped me again.

He fisted my hairs in a tight grip making me hiss in pain and like he isn't satisfied with this that he holds my jaw in a tight grip as well.

"Listen me and listen me good butterfly never ever fucking dare to push me away from you. You're fucking mine and I can do anything I want to do with you. Keep this thing in your super active brain. It's the last time you pushed me away from you understand?" he asked and kept my mouth shut

" Answer me butterfly "he said and tighten his hold on my hairs like he will rip them off from my scalp.

" Yes. "I gritted out and he left me with a smile

He fucking smiled at me?

My scalp is burning and Jaw is hurting.

" See how easy it was but as always you have to be a naughty girl and I have to punish you to make you a good girl. "He said still showing his all teeths and show his dimples

If it was some other time and he wasn't my fucking kidnapper then I would have been fan girl over his looks but now that's a big no.

This man is a Devil under human skin.

" Get up and freshen up I will send maids who will give you your breakfast and then get you ready for our wedding. "He said still smiling

" And who said I'm marrying you? "I could not stop my sharp tongue from uttering this words

Someday this tongue will kill me that's for sure but I will love to be killed better than to be with a psychotic bastard like him.

" No? You won't marry me? "he asked with a pout

Wait did he just pouted? What is he 5?

"Nope I won't. And you can only force me to do so because I won't marry you with my will ever" I told him firmly

"You have hurt me butterfly. Very bad." He said like a child

What the hell is cooking in his brain?

"But then I know how to change your answer." He said and grinned

OK now I'm scared he is behaving like a possessed man.

"Butterfly you love your father right? And he loves his Career and image? He has a clean record , what will happen if someone die because of him or someone frame him for something he never did? What will happen butterfly? He will die in shame tsk tsk and why? Because his daughter is so selfish that she didn't care about him.

Then your step mother who is your aunt, what will happen if she gets raped at this age? You know few men have fetishes of aged and experienced pussies they would like to have.

And why is that? Because the girl she raised from birth as her daughter is a bad omen and because of her this happened.

And then your dearest cousin Stuti She is recently married right? Her husband is an IPS officer. He works with danger, what if he dies suddenly?

She will be a young widow so bad.

And she is so beautiful as well any brothel will like to have a gem like her in their collection.

She will become a prostitute and why is that? Because her cousin doesn't love her enough to save her because she is selfish. "He said all of this while smiling

He can't be serious, he can't do this..

" Girl he burned a girl in front of you yesterday he has caged you here in this island, even faked your death still you think he isn't serious? Come on girl he isn't joking around with you. He is fucking serious "my subconscious screamed at me

" You won't do anything like this will you? You're just scaring me. "I told him

" Butterfly you don't know me well. I don't give empty threats ever and I'm not threatening you as well. I am just saying my plan about your dear family. But you know I can change my plan if I

become busy and do you know how that is possible? Just ask me to marry you. That's it. "He said calmly

Tears are pouring from my eyes freely.

He will make their life miserable. I can't be selfish. I can't let them suffer because of me no I can't.

" Why are you doing this with me? What I have done to you? I'm still your brother's fiance." I told him showing the ring that Aashu give me while proposing I wore it on my ring finger

His eyes darken but the smile never left his face.

"True you're still his fiance. Wait, I have a solution for that as well." He said and took out something from his pocket

It's a black Swan shape ring with Ruby and diamonds.

He held my hand and removed the engagement ring and tossed it away like trash and made me wear the black ring.

" See now you're no longer associated with him now you're engaged with me. I don't have much time to waste Butterfly

Tell me what do you want?" he asked and I accepted my defeat

"will you.. Will you marry me?" I spat those words

"Oh my goodness you just proposed to me how I can not accept it. Obviously I will marry you. It's a yes. Now get ready in 3 hours we are getting married." He said and kissed my ring finger where now his ring is glowing.

I want to throw it away from me. And it's like he heard my inner thoughts.

" If you dared to remove it then I swear you won't have a finger to wear them anymore. "He said and left from there making me cry my heart out.

# Chapter 50 the Disastrous Wedding

Turvi's pov

A girl has a lot of wishes in her life for that one particular day. Her wedding day.

She dreamt about it from her childhood that she will do this, she will do that and the list goes on.

I also have dreamt about this day from my childhood and when I met Aashu I dreamed about this day with him but now my every dream is shattered in pieces.

It's not less than any nightmare for me now.

I never ever imagined that my wedding will become the day I will detest most.

I'm here dolled up in bridal attire to get married with that psychotic bastard.

"You're looking so beautiful, my mistress, master will be awestruck by your beauty." one of them said

I glared at her but she totally ignored my glares.

"Don't mind her mistress. She is a blind follower of a master." Another one said

I just nodded my head.

"Let's go mistress, it's time." The same maid who compliment me said and make me stand

We went downstairs and I found him standing there in his traditional attire.

Sue me for saying this but he is looking extremely handsome.

The fact that he is hot can't be changed by anything but that doesn't mean I like him or something.

"You all did a great job with her. My butterfly is looking so beautiful in her bridal attire." He said roaming his eyes eyes on me

I looked at my surroundings and found it decorated for the wedding.

A priest is here as well who is sweating like a pig.

He must have threatened him as well.

" It's time for the wedding. "the priest said

" Sure, "saying that bastard hold my hand and dragged me towards the aisle

I didn't bother to stop him because I know he will show his psychotic drama nothing else…

And maybe kill one of these innocent people.

" You're learning fast. I'm impressed. "He said and I give him a blank look

" Smile butterfly, you're getting married, no one is killing you. "He said smiling creepily

It's better to be killed then marrying you but not being paralysed of course.

You won't kill me but surely cut my hands and legs and that's the last thing I want.

I kept my head down while the priest chanted the mantra.

I tried to zone out but that bastard dug his nails on my palm whenever I tried.

Soon we both exchanged the garlands and then took 7 rounds of fire.

All the guards and maids are watching the wedding with interest like it's some film.

My vision clouded with tears when he tied the mangalsutra (nuptial chain) around my neck.

And a sob escaped from my mouth when he filled my hair partition with sindur (vermilion).

That's it! Everything is finished, no going back from here. My life is destroyed by this bastard.

"Congratulations Mrs. Turvi Aaryav Raichand." He said and I cringed at my new name.

"If you don't stop crying then I swear I will give you a good reason to cry." He said when I started to cry hard

I wiped my tears immediately but they kept falling.

"Take your mistress in our room and yes take care of her. And you know we'll what you have to do later." He said and the maids nodded

They took me to a new room that's bigger and grand than the one where I was staying.

So this is the Demon's room. And my new cage.

" Sonya you go and bring food for mistress" the maid who has a sympathetic look said to the blind follower maid

"OK." saying she left

"Mistress listens to me and listens to me carefully. If you want to be alive then don't try to defy master ever or challenge him. He is a sadist who gets pleasure by torturing others he kills for fun.

He killed one of the maids as well whom you hit before and escaped. He is dangerous, please don't provoke him because he gives painful death. And that no one will want for his enemy as well. I feel

bad for you but I'm helpless. Please Cooperate with him to make him happy and you will stay happy and Alive."She said the things I know already

I know very well that what he is capable of.

" I already know what you told me. What's your name? "I told her and she nodded

" Trisha, mistress. Me and Sonya both are your personal maids "trisha said

" Call me Turvi. I don't like to be addressed as Mistress or something. "I told her

" No I can't. Master will cut my tongue if I took your name. "she said and I nodded in acknowledgement

I should have thought that before. He is a sadistic bastard. He can do it.

Sonya came with food and I ate it without any fuss as I need food for energy. Because I need that a lot to fight that monster.

The day rolled away and night came with its darkness.

The night is moonless means tonight's lunar phase of the new moon.

No moon, only dark sky, just like my life with no light.

"Mistress you need to get ready for your wedding night." Trisha said and I looked at her with shock

Fuck! I forgot about my wedding night completely.

No! no! no! I can't let him touch me but can I stop him from taking me?

I don't think he will stop for anything tonight.

Will he rape me? If yes then he has to rape me only I won't give myself to him with my own will.

"Just like you didn't agree for marriage right?" my subconscious mocked me

He can get anything he wants from me by using my family as bait.

I just nodded my head and they took me back to the room where I was staying before.

They dolled me up in a red Kanjivaram saree with lots of jewelry.

They put a red bindi on my forehead and filled my hairline with lots of sindur

.

I'm looking so beautiful but this beauty is a curse for me nothing else.

He got attracted because of my beauty only I don't find any other reason for this marriage.

"Now you're ready for your first night don't make master angry it won't end for you good." Sonya said and I give her a shut the fuck up look

"She is right mistress." Trisha said and I looked at her

No need to remind me what I didn't forget in the first place.

They took me back to that room that is now ready for a wedding night.

God help me out from this shit.

# Chapter 51 the tale of past

Turvi's pov

Sonya and Trisha have left me here alone waiting for that bastard.

My palms are sweating very badly. With the mere thought of tonight.

I couldn't even eat because of this.

Suddenly the door of the room opened and that devil appeared.

He looked at me from head to toe and hummed in approval.

Like I fucking need it.

"Sure you don't." mocked my subconscious

He locked the door and came towards me taking predatory steps towards me.

I took step backs but the bed came between.

Fuck you bed! Why do you have to come between?

"You're looking breathtakingly gorgeous. This married look really suits you." He said and I shut my mouth

"Don't open your mouth and give him chance to torture you." My subconscious said

And I totally agree with her.

"What happened? Cat caught your tongue? Won't you say anything?" he mocked me

"Don't you feel any shame?" I asked him ignoring the red flags my mind is giving me

"Shame? For what reason care to explain?"he asked like he doesn't know about what I'm talking about

" You married your own younger brother's fiance. You snatched his love from him. You lusted over his girl. You betrayed your own brother. Do I need to give anymore reasons? "I asked him

I thought he would slap me or scream but he started to laugh and it sounded like a dying whale.

" Oh butterfly you're so naive. Why will be I ashamed to do something that already has happened before as well? "he asked and I raised my eyebrows

" What do you mean? "I asked him

I will do anything to divert his mind from this so-called wedding night.

" Trying to divert my mind from our wedding night are we butterfly? Tsk you're very bad at that anyways i will tell you what I mean. "He said and I looked shocked

He is so clever, fucking cunning bastard.

" My mother Annapurna Raichand was first betrothed to my uncle Aashish. Just like you and Aashank. My mother was an orphan and not to forget a great dancer just like you. But she wasn't a disobedient girl like you.

My father saw her on their engagement itself as he was out for some work.

When he saw her he knew that he had to have her as his.

It was love at first sight you see.

Just like I wanted you..

My mother loved my uncle but then my father did something and she got married to him instead of my uncle just like you and me.

My uncle thought she betrayed him. And left India to handle our business outside.

Long story short my father tamed my mother and she conceived me.

From that day my father treated her like a fragile glass and showered more love on her.

My mother also accepted her life and decided to start loving my father as he is what she has.

I took birth and their life was happy.

My mother also fell for my father. They were the perfect couple.

My father fulfilled her dream of becoming a dancer and opened A&A academy.

Everything was fine but then everything changed when I turned 11.

My uncle came back from outside and started to stay with us.

I still remember those days…

He didn't marry anyone till date. He said that he is over my mother but he wasn't.

He stayed there for a few months. He loved me very much.

But one day dad was out for some meeting he would be late that we knew.

Momma was telling me a bedtime story.

I fell asleep very soon.

But then after sometime I heard some screaming like Mumma was screaming.

I got up from my bed and immediately called my dad.

Because it was his order that if I felt anything was wrong , to call him immediately…

I did and asked him to come back.

After that I tried to find Mumma but I couldn't…

I tried really hard but I didn't find her.

No maid or guard was there as well.

I could hear some voice but can't find her

Dad came back and hugged me tightly.

He asked what happened to Mumma and where she?

I couldn't tell him anything.

He left me with his guard and started to find her..

After sometime he came out with my Mom's naked body covered in his jacket and took her towards their room.

No guard looks at them because they know if they dared to eye my mother they wouldn't be alive to see the next day.

I didn't understand what happened exactly.

Everything was normal for me but my Momma sure wasn't.

Dad told me to not ask any questions to her about that night and I obliged him. After all, I was his good son.

Soon my mother told me that I'm going to be a big brother and I was so happy.

My brother Aashank came into our life.

When he turned 5 the attacks of the rival mafia had increased.

I was 16 that time when my father told me the truth.

That my Momma was raped by my uncle and Aashank is the result of that only.

He asked me to save him from every danger until he doesn't betray me.

Betrayal Is in our blood.

I promised him that I won't let any harm come to him and after a few days my parents died in an accident.

It wasn't an accident but a pre planned murder.

I lost my parents at once and was left with my half brother to take care of.

My Momma loved him as much she loved me. She never let him feel that he is a rape child.

Though I'm also a rape child but the difference is my father was her husband but my uncle nope.

You know why my uncle raped her? Because she didn't want to leave everything and go with him.

Our story is kind of the same butterfly but the end will be different. I won't let aashank ever find out that you're alive neither will I let any baby come in our way. I can't and won't share you with anyone ever.

And if a situation arises then I will take extreme steps to make sure that everything is perfect. "He said and I was gaping at him

Aashu isn't his own brother but half brother.

No wonder he didn't even think before doing this because he belongs to a fucked up family.

His father did the same with his mother. Oh god they all are sick.

" Now tell me why I should feel ashamed about this? It's my family legacy, nothing else. And try to become like my mother." He said and I looked at him

"Be like your mother? You mean to say accept this pathetic life and love your rapist husband be a puppet? You know what I should not be saying this but your mother was a fool. Who the hell can love their rapist? And when your uncle gives her a chance to escape then she should have escaped from this mess but now she again did some foolishness and that led her to this. If I get any chance like this no matter what I won't think before escaping this hell.

Mind it Aaryav Raichand you can't cage me here in your hell forever. The first chance I will get I will escape. "I told him and bite my tongue looking at his face

His eyes are pitch black in anger.

Shit! What the fucking shit I said to him? Was I high on drugs or what?

He smirked at me and this smirk is a promise that I will definitely regret whatever I said now.

# Chapter 52 torture begins 1

Mayire content ahead

Author's pov

Aaryav is looking at Turvi with an evil smirk.

Turvi is sweating badly in fear of what will happen next.

"So you think my mother was a fool huh? And you will escape from here as you get any chance huh? I can't keep you caged?" Aaryav asked calmly

His facial expression is neutral but his eyes are telling a different story.

"Yes" Turvi said and bite her tongue

"What the hell? Why did I say yes?" she thought

"Thinking hard right that why the fuck you're speaking the truth?" he asked Turvi and in answer she nodded her head

"Butterfly you know you should check what you eat. Oh how will you check when you don't have that privilege? My bad I forgot it." Aaryav said with a smirk

"Will you stop beating around the Bush and fucking come on point?" Turvi asked and bite her tongue

"You're not dumb to not connect the dots now are you? Maybe you're really dumb and only has a sharp tongue that always throw you in trouble. You have consumed a drug butterfly and that's why you are saying what you're feeling. It's like you're sober yet drunk. "Aaryav said and Turvi widen her eyes in shock

(I don't know that this kind of drugs are real or not so don't start bashing me if it's not real)

" You fucking bastard how dare you? I will kill you. "Turvi screamed

" And how will you kill me? "he asked her wiggling his eyebrows

" You know what butterfly you deserves a good punishment for disrespecting my mother and our relationship. Didn't your masi taught you that marriage is a bond of 7 lives and only death can separate us from each other no one else? What a bad upbringing you got." Aaryav mocked

" Don't bring my Mumma in between. She has given me a very good upbringing. And when someone marries a devil like you then 7 lives are far. 7 minutes are tough to spend together. "Turvi again said what she felt

" Your thoughts are really amusing me. I should give you this drug on a regular basis but then it will harm your health and I can't take risks with you. But now punishment time. "Saying Aaryav went outside of the room and came back with a pair or hand and leg cuffs along with a whip and a tattoo machine.

" What are these? "Turvi asked fearfully

She knows he is going to do something really horrible with her for talking nonsense.

" You are not blind to not see what these right butterfly or are you? "he asked and walked towards her

Turvi could not understand what to do. Her body was already in pain because of the accident and those incidents with her.

When Aaryav came towards her she decided to run away from this room and lock him inside as the room is soundproof no one will be able to hear him.

She pushed him hard suddenly making him stumble a bit and ran towards the door but she couldn't open the door.

"The door is locked, do you think I will leave the door open knowing how desperate my wife can be to run?" Aaryav said going towards her

She is literally shaking in fear, tears flowing down freely.

"Why tears butterfly? I didn't do anything to make you cry yet then why?" he asked wiping her tears

For a moment Turvi felt that he was really concerned about her. His tone is so soft and humble just like her Aashu but in the next moment she screamed as Aaryav held her from her hairs tightly.

Her hairs are open and decorated with jasmine flowers.

"Wait for the reason's butterfly . I will give you a lot of reasons to cry until you can't anymore." Aaryav said and dragged her by her hairs

"Leave me, it's hurting. I won't say anything again. Please." Turvi begged him as her scalp is burning because of his tight hold on her hairs

"Did it change your views about everything?" Aaryav asked and Turvi kept mum knowing well she will be in more shit if she open her mouth

"Your silence is giving all the answers butterfly." Aaryav said and throw her on the bed that is decorated with red rose petals and has a white silk bed sheet for their wedding night

"Please forgive me." Turvi said but he didn't paid any attention to her

He handcuff her with the headrest of the bed and cuffed her legs with the end of the bed pillars as well

"Please Aaryav leave me please." Turvi screamed and Aaryav stopped

"What did you say? Did you just take my name butterfly? You're not supposed to take your husband's name butterfly bad manners, you can only take my name when I'm making love with you while you can moan about it." Aaryav said and smiled at his art work

Turvi is tied to the bed, completely vulnerable at his mercy; she is sprawled there like a starfish.

"Let's see what I got in my wife," he said and removed her jewelleries one by one ignoring Turvi's screaming

He removed everything except her mangalsutra. He felt proud looking at the mangalsutra.

"See I even made a mangalsutra of Butterfly shape but yet you didn't even thank me once for such an ungrateful girl you're." Aaryav said and unpinned her saree

Turvi is constantly thrashing but because of the cuffs she can't do anything.

"Please don't. Don't touch me. I hate you, don't touch me, you don't have any rights to touch me." She screamed but got a hard slap in return

"I'm your fucking husband and you don't want me to touch you huh? So whom do you want to touch you my brother? Such a slut you're. God knows are you even pure or not. I promise you butterfly if you're not pure I will make your life pure hell and kill that bastard who has taken your purity. Because you're not raped definitely so it will mean you're equally responsible for losing it to some mother fucker. "He spat the words and again slapped her hard and pressed her already bruised cheeks tight making her scream in pain.

" Your body is mine butterfly. Every inch of this body is mine. Your whole existence belongs to me. Never ever dream about another man. "He said and again slapped her hard

Turvi is crying hard and screaming in pain. To shut her up he took his handkerchief and tied it on her mouth

Her screams got muffled because of it.

He removed her saree completely leaving her in a blouse and under skirt.

He removed her blouse and Turvi closed her eyes in shame.

She could not even cover herself.

At a point she stopped screaming as her body was feeling tired.

She has screamed a lot.

As he removed the blouse his eyes darkened with lust because she isn't wearing any bra.

He didn't provide her with any panties as well.

"So beautiful. Are they still untouched or you let someone play with them?" Aaryav asked and Turvi wanted to die

He is molesting her in the first place and insulting her as well. He is making it sound like she is a whore who fuck around with boys.

She isn't that much scared of his torture but she is scared to be raped. After her molestation in childhood she is afraid of forced sexual actions.

"Never mind now they are mine to do anything I want." He said and pinched her both nipples together hard

Turvi screamed in pain as he was rough with her and his touch had nothing soft. But it came out as muffled sobs due to the handkerchief

He slapped her breasts for 5 times until they became red.

He felt fascinated by the way her milky white skin turned bright red.

The first ever mark he left on her..

He slowly caressed her now red snow balls and leaned to kiss it but stopped himself reminding her that it was her punishment.

He removed her underskirt and took time to admire the view of her womanhood that is cleanly shaved.

It was dripping wet with arousal. The pain is turning her on.

"Such a naughty girl. you're dripping wet because I slapped your breasts." Aaryav said and Turvi just wanted to die that moment

He pushed his two fingers in her pink and swollen vagina and started to pump it inside and outside very roughly making Turvi again cry out in pain.

Its first time he is doing some sexual activities with some girl normally he just take oral sex from whores that's it. Nothing more.

He is liking the tightness of her virgin hole.

"You're so tight butterfly tell me are you a virgin?" he asked her and Turvi nodded her head immediately

She just doesn't want to get raped. She is already in pain and started to feel light headed as well.

"Good for you" saying he fucked her hard with his fingers but stopped in middle when he didn't got any reaction from her

Her body wasn't shaking anymore nor was she crying.

He took out his fingers from her womanhood and found out she has passed out already. Her face is flushed red and her nose is running because she has been crying for so long, not to mention her face is covered with tears and sweat as well.

"Tsk tsk tsk not so soon butterfly you can't pass out yet. I haven't started my punishment yet and you passed out very wrong." Aaryav said and smirked Devilishly as an idea popped in his mind

# Chapter 53 torture Begins 2

Matire content ahead

Author's pov

Turvi is unconscious without knowing what's going to happen with her

Aaryav has a sadistic smirk on his face as he picks a candle that is there for decoration.

"Let's mark you butterfly." He said and tilted the candle so the wax would melt and fall on her body.

He held it on her right breast and the drops fell on her.

She didn't move or react as she was unconscious.

He trailed it to her left breast then cleavage her stomach and lastly on her womanhood.

Her upper body is covered with wax. He harshly scratched it all and her white skin turned red.

He is fascinated with the colour red.

He again repeated the process until her skin became bright red. At this time Turvi started to whimper as she could feel the pain a little bit.

"How can you sleep so long?" he thought and took a glass of water and throw on her face but still she didn't wake up so he again throw another glass of water and this time she open her eyes

Her whole body is burning because of the wax torture he did on her.

" What did you do to me? My whole body is burning." Turvi cried out but due to the handkerchief tied on her mouth it came out muffled but nevertheless he understood what she was trying to say.

"Nothing much just played with wax a little. Now as you're awake we will start the second part of your punishment." Aaryav said and Turvi looked she will die now only

"What more does he want to do?" she thought

Without any warning he turned her body around and she screamed as her front body came in contact with the bed sheet. Her front is sensitive now.

"shh! Don't make much noise. I haven't fucked you yet." Aaryav said as he hold the tattoo machine but then dropped it

He got up and lit a cigarette and took a long puff.

He smirked and  carved "TAKEN BY AARYAV RAICHAND" on her back bone with that cigarette

Whenever she screamed high in pain he pressed it harder.

Turvi didn't thrash much because she was already in pain. Thrashing will give more pain than anything else. She kept crying and cursing her fate.

She doesn't know what she did to get this punishment.

But then she remembered because of her a girl was burned alive. It's nothing in front of that.

"Perfect now I have marked you permanently. Don't worry I will again mark you when it starts to fade away. now be a good girl and lay here silently." He said and got up

Turvi sighed thinking that maybe her suffering has ended but how wrong she is.

A shrieking noise left her mouth as Aaryav hit her back with a whip

He started to whip her body continuously.

Turvi kept crying and screaming but nothing worked on him.

Everything fell in deaf ears.

Her whole back became a bloody mess.

After like 40 hits he finally stopped his torture.

He untied her legs and hands then her mouth and pulled her from the bed and found her unconscious again.

He shook his head and took her inside the washroom and made her stand under the shower so the blood would wash off from her body.

But this time water also didn't work on her. She didn't get her consciousness back.

Aaryav admired his art work on her body and traced the burn marks.

He took her back in the room and made her wear his shirt and called the lady doctor.

"Why do you make me angry butterfly? See what I did to your smooth body. It's not that I'm regretting it but still you should not piss me off." Aaryav said as he traced her face lovingly

"Master may I come in?" the lady doctor said

"Yes come." He said

"Check your mistress and tell me how long it will take her to be fine?" Aaryav added and the lady doctor nodded her head

"Can you leave master? Please?" the doctor said and Aaryav nodded and left from there

The doctor gasped looking at Turvi when she removed her shirt. Her whole apperience is screaming the torture she has bared.

Her eyes teared looking at Turvi's unconscious self but she could not do anything.

She is an old woman who has a daughter younger than Turvi.

She only can imagine what inhumanity he has shown on her petite body.

Holding her tears back she dressed her wounds.

She bandaged her back where he had carved his name with a cigarette.

She injected her with some medicine so she would sleep for some time.

After composing herself she took a deep breath and went outside.

"How is she?" he asked her

"Master, mistress needs rest as I told you before. She has survived an accident and her body is weak and today you…. Whatever happened to her is too much. At this rate she will die." the lady doctor said

"Do anything you want to but make sure she stays alive she can't die. Not yet." Aaryav said with a smirk and the doctor nodded

"Master please spare her for a few days. Don't do anything with her and give her time to heal. Once she is fine you can resume whatever you want to do with her." The doctor said with heavy heart

She can't believe she is saying this for someone but what can she do? Nothing. Absolutely nothing. So it's better to be safe.

" Hmm she will need rest after whatever I did with her but she totally deserves that. Anyways I have some work to settle so I will be out for some days to make sure she becomes fine till I come back." Aaryav said and the doctor sighed in relief and nodded her head

Aaryav didn't check on her but just tightened the security around the mansion and ordered the maids to be present for her and the guards to be in their limits. No man has the permission to look at his possession.

After securing everything he left for his work.

He feels nothing for her. No love no affection but has a great attraction for her.

Or I say obsession for her. He just wants to break her according to his liking. He wants to tame her from a wild cat to a scared kitten.

Who will be scared of him and obey him like a slave.

Her pain and her tears don't matter to him.

She is something he hates from his core but yet he is attracted to her. He wants her to change for him. In something he loves.

It's not that Turvi is the only girl that falls under his hate list but none of them was as attractive as her.

She is the first girl who has dared to challenge even knowing well who he is and that fascinated him more.

He doesn't want her dead as well, not yet. She has to be there to fulfil his sick desires after that she can die but only in his hands.

He thinks what he feels for her is temporary after he is done with her it will go away but he doesn't know that with each passing day his Feelings are forming in something that holds the power to destroy him.

# Chapter 54 Dead soul

Turvi's pov

Pain is all I can feel over my body along with a burning sensation.

It hurts to even move a bit from my position. Tears also aren't coming out. I'm running out of tears as I cried last night very hard.

I'm lying on bed now in the same room where he tortured me. Where he raped me.

Snatched my dignity from me forcefully.

I am not sure about it but why will he leave that opportunity?

He did a lot of things so why not this?

I just want to die for nothing else. My life is now a living hell.

Each day I will live it will be more horrible for me.

He is not a human, he is a devil, a pure monster under human skin.

Now I think it was better if my real mother chose herself over me, it was better if I never came into this world.

Are they happy that now I'm not a part of their life?

Stuti must be really sad but then jiju is there to support her. With time she will forget me. I will become a distant memory for them.

But mumma and papa? I guess papa is sad a little but not Mumma. She wanted me to leave right? I am a bad omen according to her right?

They all will forget about my existence. I will become a distant memory for them.

They will live happily and I? I will die everyday with my psycho husband.

He will kill me one day at this rate, that's for sure.

But will I regret being dead? Nope not at all I will feel myself lucky if I get the chance to die at least I will be saved from this daily torture.

He hasn't shown me his face yet and I'm happy about that.

No one has come here to check on me for that matter.

Maybe they thought I'm still passed out because of the inhuman torture that I beared.

Suddenly the door opened and I closed my eyes in fear that maybe that bastard is here.

He will again torture me if he found me awake.

But there is no guarantee that he won't torture me if he found me unconscious.

He forced me last night. He did what I feared most. He forced himself on me.

And give another reason to hate him.

He has ruined my body completely. It's filled with marks.

"I know you're awake." I heard a voice and that doesn't belongs to him

It's a female voice.

I opened my eyes and saw a woman in her mid forties was there. She has a medical kit in her hand maybe she is the doctor who treated my wounds

"How are you feeling now, mistress?" she asked and I just smiled at her

"I'm feeling like I'm in heaven. Because I'm dead." I told her and she looked sad

"Mistress I know your life is no less than hell. Master has tortured you horribly. But I'm helpless. So are others. Few are loyal to him by their own will, few are forced to be loyal with him because they fear him. He is very dangerous and he can kill you. I have a daughter myself who is 18 years old. I can't imagine this happening with her. I want to help you but in return I will get horrific death and so will my family. So please forgive me. I can just help you with physical pain and wounds. And one more thing don't do something that an anger master does because he doesn't show his anger like other people but the result of his anger is horrific. I don't know what you did that he tortured you this horribly. But please don't defy him from next time if you want to be alive. "She said and I looked at her with a blank face

I don't want to be alive, I want to die for real just like others think.

" Can you check something? "I asked her blankly

" Yes, tell me. "she said

" Am I still a virgin or he robbed it from me? "I asked her

" You're still a virgin. I checked you last night only. Your body is in bad shape and it needs time to heal. Don't worry about him, he won't be coming back for at least 2 weeks. He is out for business work. "she said and I sighed in relief

At least I'm going to be ok for 2 weeks but what about that? He will come back and again torture me.

He may haven't raped me yet but he will once he comes back.

" Now let me check you then you need to have food and medicines." she said and I nodded

I winced in pain whenever she touched the places to check my wounds.

"I need to change the bandages over 24 hours." She said I looked shocked

I was out for 24 hours? Wow just wow. But I should not be shocked. The amount of torture he did on my body it's quite normal to be out for that time.

She changed my bandages and wrapped me in a fresh set of bandages and left.

My whole body is looking like a mummy. Except my face he has ruined everything.

He didn't leave my private parts as well.

Soon Trisha and Sonya came inside with fruit and medicines with them.

"How are you feeling now?" Trisha asked me with tears

She is scared looking at me. Anyone will be scared looking at a mummy like me.

"How must she feel, Trisha? Obviously she is in pain after all she tortured this brutally." Sonya said and for once i agree with her

"But she completely deserves it. She disrespected master and got punishment as simple as that. But I must say the master Really loves her otherwise he won't be engraving his name on her collarbone with a cigarette. She is now marked again by him like his any other possession" Sonya finished her rant

I guess I talked a little early about her and agreed with her and waited. What does she mean by name engraving with a cigarette?

I remember he had burnt me with a cigarette but his name? Oh god did that bastard engraved his name on my body? Wasn't this sindoor and mangalsutra enough that he had to use that as well?

"Sonya shut up how can you say it after you were also tortured like her by your husband?" Trisha asked her and I look at Sonya in shock

# Chapter 55 silence before the storm

Turvi's pov

I stared at both girls in shock. Did she just say that Sonya was also tortured?

"I am saying this because I know this.. My husband was just like a master. He taught me that it's my fault that he punished me. And I became what he wanted me to be and then he never punished me out of bed. Until the master called me here when I was there he disciplined me. And it's not torture but punishment. For our misdeeds. " Sonya said and I looked at her

What the fuck she is talking?

" Sonya it's called abuse and leave it why I'm even trying to tell you this. You are better with that husband of yours only. Why master has even called you here only God knows. "Trisha said

" Just like he called you Trisha. We both are associated with high rank members of his gang. You're his third in commands sister and I'm his best shooter's wife. He wants us to take care of his queen and make her understand what is our life not support her bull shit. "Sonya hissed

" Shut up! Both of you don't talk in front of me like I don't exist here. And leave me alone. I don't need any of you now. "I told them with difficulty

" We can't leave you. "Sonya said

" Do you think your master will like it if You disobey your mistress? "I asked her

She looked thoughtful about it and left hurriedly.

" Mistress please don't listen to her. She is just mentally a bit unstable the torture she has faced has changed her. You just eat now. You need it. "Trisha said and feed me as I can't eat by myself

After this she even helped me to use the washroom.

What is my fate now? I'm a burden now on others.

2 weeks passed by in a blink. Today that bastard is coming back.

I have healed in these 2 weeks but those marks are there and I guess they will be there permanently. His name on my skin is healing as well and I know he will again burn me there.

Trisha and Sonya both stay with me every time. Sonya is like a robot who just narrates what to do and what to not.

How should I behave like a submissive and so on. To be honest I hear everything she says carefully.

I don't want another repeat telecast of what ever happened with me.

The mere thought gives shivers to me. I can't even go outside of this room. I'm caged here.

They give me food and other things. I can even watch TV and listen to music but I can't do anything else.

He is coming and I'm sure he will take my virginity this time for sure.

My periods just finished 2 days back I don't have any reason to stop him from raping me.

"Mistress you need to get ready." Trisha said and I looked at her

"Why?" I asked her blankly

"Master is coming. He wants you to see it all dolled up for him." she said and I sighed

Now I have to doll up for him. I nodded my head as I didn't want to get whipped again.

She brought a Yellow  banarsi saree with thick pink border and pink pallu for me with jewellery.

"I don't know how to drape a saree." I told her

"I know the master told me that. I will drape it on you. You just need to wear the blouse and the underskirt. And this set of bra and pantie." She said and hand me the items

I looked at the bra and pantie it's transparent . So he asked me to wear this now? Wasn't he a traditional man?

I shook my head and went inside the washroom. It was marvelous.

Someone can spend his day in this washroom only.

This man is filthy rich who the hell has this royal arrangement in a dam island mansion where he doesn't even stay?

I stripped from my clothes that I was wearing and wore the ones I needed.

I went out and Trisha started her work on me.

She draped the saree beautifully and did my make up as well.

Making me wear earrings and sindoor and mangalsutra in a good amount and fill my hands with red and white chura bangles, she finished her work.

I didn't apply sindur or wear the mangalsutra these days. I even remove the chura bangles.

I don't want to remember that I'm married to him. I want to remove every sign of this marriage but how can I forget about the scars he gave me?

It doesn't let me forget what he did with me.

"Mistress please don't cry your makeup will be ruined and master will punish us both" she said scared and I wiped my tears

I didn't even realise when I started to cry.

My life is this only now nothing else. It's long that anyone took my name.

I haven't heard anyone taking my name.

I have requested them so many times but they are scared of that psycho. That he will cut their tongue

if they took my name. And I won't be Surprised if he did as well.

He can do that. Nothing is impossible for him.

Suddenly the aura of the room changed. Something is not right here.

I looked at trisha and found her gone already and instead of her my Psycho husband is there.

Did I just call him my husband? Fuck that. He is just a bastard not my husband.

"You're looking beautiful just like a freshly bloomed rose." He said eyeing my body.

"Yeah eye my body and see the oh so beautiful marks you left on me."I wanted to say but the slap came in my vision and I opted to shut my mouth.

I tugged my baby hairs beside my ear as they were bothering me.

I stayed silent not wanting to get slapped again.

" Does your masi teach you this only? When your husband come back from work after two weeks you stay silent?" he asked and I bite my lips to not say anything

He always says the same thing.

His eyes darken suddenly looking at me.

He came towards me and freed my lips from my teeth.

" They are mine to bite butterfly. Not yours. "saying he slammed his lips on mine

He kissed me aggressively trying to get entrance but I didn't allow him.

He pinched my waist hard enough to leave Mark making me scream in pain and he took advantage of it.

He sucked my saliva like honey.

I was feeling like I would pass out when he spared my lips.

I bet my lips are swollen. He traced them with his thumb and I shivered visibly.

He smiled looking at me

And hold my hand in his.

Wait why is he smiling?

"Remember what I told you when I made you wear the ring? That if you dared to remove it then you won't have a finger left to wear a ring?" he said and I nodded

"Then why did you remove it butterfly?" he said and raised my hand where his ring isn't present

# Chapter 56 the storm

Mature content ahead

Turvi's pov

"Remember what I told you when I made you wear the ring? That if you dared to remove it then you won't have a finger left to wear a ring?" he said and I nodded

"Then why did you remove the butterfly?" he said and raised my hand where his ring isn't present

Fuck! Where the hell is that ring? He will cut my finger oh god.

"I didn't remove it, I swear on god." I lied because I did remove it but I think I wore it didn't I?

"Yeah if you did then it would be on your finger babe." My subconscious mocked

"Is it a butterfly? You didn't remove it?" he asked while caressing my hand and I nodded

"Don't you know that lying is bad? And bad girls get punishment." He said smiling at me

Whenever he smiles it brings danger to me nothing else.

Suddenly I felt a pain in my ring finger making me scream in pain.

"Aghhh! Leave," I screamed as I found him bending my ring finger backwards

"Please leave" I screamed and he left

My finger is hurting so much. I fell down on the floor as he slapped me suddenly.

What the fuck he want from me?

"Please leaveeeee….." I screamed as he placed his feet on my fingers

He is crushing it with his feet.

"How can I leave you butterfly? When you are clearly lying on my face. Not only this but you even removed every single nuptial from your body. You wore everything just few minutes back isn't it?" he asked and put more pressure on my fingers

"Leave me you psycho what do you expect me to do then? Wear this stupid nuptials that shows I'm a man's wife who molested me? Raped me almost? Tortured me? No I won't wear any of it can you hear me? I won't wear anything." I yelled in my mind

I can't take the risk of saying these things aloud. I love my life too much to say these things and get slaughter by him

He stepped aside from my fingers and I lifted it and kept it near my heart.

I caressed the damaged area and flinched. Tears aren't stopping flowing.

"So you think I molested you butterfly?" he asked and I looked at him in horror

How did he know?

"Answer me butterfly? You think I molested you and raped you almost and I'm a psycho as well huh?" he asked again

"How do you know?" I asked him literally, shivering in fear…

His eyes are pure evil. No humanity is shown there.

"Tsk tsk butterfly before pouring your heart out you should check whether you're talking loudly or in your mind. So bad you screamed them loud and I heard them." He said and I felt like i will faint

"Please I'm sorry. I won't do it again. Forgive me please." I told him joining my hands in front of him ignoring the pain in my hand

"Why are you saying sorry? You think I molested you right? Then why are you saying sorry?" he screamed at me and I lowered my gaze

"Who do you think you are? You're not some beautiful fairy. It's not that you're the only girl who is beautiful in this world. And moreover you are not even beautiful. The reason I married you was because you kept disrespecting me even after knowing who I'm and what my status is.

You know what girls like you are meant to just use and throw by men. Sluts like you who love to flaunt their body in front of men should be in a brothel. You fucking seduced me so I can notice you.

It's my fault actually that I even married you. Your status is just to be my mistress nah not even mistress but sex slave. I just want to break you to the extent that the fire in you will subside. And this sharp tongue of yours won't spill venom. I don't know what my brother even saw in you.

He is still mourning over you like an emotional fool.

Come on man she is gone and now move on from her and find someone else.

And about that molesting part. You're my so-called wife. I have every fucking right to touch you and do anything to you and your body. As your husband it's my right. I can even kill you, that's all my right. On your body, on your soul, on your heart and on your life I have every right.

I can have you any time any moment i want and it's your duty to submit to me not to fight me.

The more you will fight me the more I will torture you. And at the end I will kill you and Bury on this island only. Your destiny is death Butterfly but how you will get it depends on you. "He said and I swear his every word hit me like an arrow

I never wanted this. I seduced him? Like really?

" I seduced you? Really? From which angle you think I seduced you? Why the hell I will seduce you? You and me we both know very well whatever bullshit you said is lie.

I love your brother and was about to get married to him but then in between you came.

I didn't beg you to marry me but you forced

Me by blackmailing me with my family.

Why did you even marry me? And one more thing marrying me doesn't give you any single right on me. I am not your toy to play.

And you know what it's better if I was sold in prostitution then marrying you.

And if I have to die then I will die now only. Kill me because I won't submit to you. I won't fucking submit to you with my will ever. I will never accept you as my husband and every time you touch me Is equals to rape for me. You will rape me if you do anything and become a rapist.

I am not beautiful right? I know I'm not so go and find some more beautiful girl and fucking leave me alone. "I screamed at him not fearing him

He can't insult me like this every single time. If he wants to kill me then let him kill me. It's better than being raped and tortured by him.

If I knew that not showing fake respect and arguing with his psycho self would do this to me I would have never argued with him in the first place.

"So you want to be a prostitute huh? You want other men to touch you huh? What can I expect from a slut like you. You're a characterless girl who is ready to spread her legs in front of anyone anytime and in front of me you're doing drama?" he said and pulled me to via my hairs

"Listen here I'm not someone to be disrespected and keep this thing in your thick skull. I'm your husband and you will accept me and submit to me and don't even think about any other men because your slutty self ain't gonna have anyone except me. And about killing you I will do that when I will be bored with you after I break you. Don't worry butterfly I will kill you for sure but after I crush your wings completely. "He said and slapped me again and again

I felt the metallic taste of my blood when I felt darkness surrounding me.

# Chapter 57 submitting to the devil

Mature content ahead

Turvi's pov

Agh! God my cheeks are hurting so much.

I open my eyes but I can't see anything. It's so dark here.

Where the fuck I'm?

I tried to sit but felt pain in my body.

"koi hai? Please mujhe bahar nikalo. (is anybody here? Please take me out)" I screamed but no answer came

I remember what happened back how he slapped me till I lost my consciousness.

That man is a sick mental. He insults me knowing very well that all of them are lies.

What does he think of himself?

And what is cooking in his sick mind now?

And why just can't I shut up? Why I have to open my mouth.

Mumma was correct one day my sharp tongue will make me fall in trouble and see that's what is happening now , because of my sharp tongue I'm getting punished.

I kept laying in the same position but it's cold here. The floor is really cold.

I don't know for how long I'm here. I am feeling too cold and my hands are paining as well.

He didn't treat my hand this time. Want me to feel pain it seems.

What is my fault in all this? Why do I have to feel this pain?

I'm feeling hungry and thirsty but here is nothing available.

And I'm having problems with breathing as well the room has no windows or ventilation.

Or maybe it's there. Because I'm still breathing with a little difficulty.

"Please help me." I screamed but nothing

I don't even know what time or day it is.

For me it's all dark.

Suddenly the door opened and the devil came inside. My vision blinded with the sudden light that came from outside.

"How are you doing butterfly?" he asked but I kept mum

He won't get any response from me.

"hmm angry huh? Good you should be angry after all you had valid reasons." he said smiling like he hasn't locked me here in this dark room

"What do you want Mr. Raichand? What more do you want from me? Isn't that what you took enough?" I asked him in my tired voice

I just want to sleep now. I'm very tired.

"tsk tsk tsk butterfly. What do I want? Don't you know what I want? And believe me butterfly I haven't taken anything from you yet so that enough word is useless here. You have a lot of things to give me butterfly. A lot of things. Your body, your soul, your heart, your loyalty, your Submission everything I want. Your thoughts will roam around me only. No one else will be in your heart or head. I will occupy the place. "He said and bent down in front of me

He caressed my injured hand and I flinched in that.

" It's hurting right? "he asked but I didn't replied

" It should, it will remind you about not going against my orders ever again. Now tell me butterfly are you ready to submit? Are you ready to become mine with your own will? "he asked

" No! Never ever I will do that. I won't become yours at any cost. "I spat with venom

" Hmm the fierceness is still here i see. No worries I will like to see how long you will stay like this. Do you know butterfly have the power of hunger and thirst? I don't think you know. Hunger and thirst can make a man do anything. If there was no hunger then no one would have worked or did anything. It's all because of hunger. But don't worry about it, you will know in the next few days. You will stay here in the dark all hungry and thirsty until you submit to me. I will come daily to check on you. Bye butterfly. See you tomorrow. "He said left from there locking me in the room again

I closed my eyes and fell asleep.

Next day he came again and asked me the same question but I denied him.

I won't let him have me.

Passing time is the hardest work here. I am trying to not think about my hunger but I can't do it. I'm feeling like I will die.

On the 3rd day he again came back and this Time he came with food and water.

"See what my cook made today. Chole kulche, you love it right? But so sad you can't have it. As you are a naughty girl." He said and started to eat in front of me

I closed my eyes but his eating sound is irritating me.

"Do you want some butterflies? It's so good. The Chole is too good. The spiciness and tanginess is perfect. And this kulche. Oh devil it's so soft. Umm delicious." He kept talking

And my hunger is taking the best from me. I got up from the floor with a lot of difficulty and walked towards him.

" Please let me eat, please I can't do it anymore. I will die. "I begged him

I can't do it. I am feeling like I'm dying. My will power is on the edge.

" I will let you eat not only this butterfly but other delicious things as well. But for that you have to submit. Just say the words that I submit to you with my own will. You can do anything you want to do with me as you're my husband. It's not hard not at all. Just say this and you will be out from here. "He said and I kept looking at the food in his hand

My head is spinning because of weakness.

" I submit to you with my own will. You can do anything you want to do with me as you're my husband, "I said and fell down because of weakness

" Ahh finally. See it wasn't hard to say this now was it? You just wasted so long on this. I told you right that the power of hunger is a lot; it can do anything? See it happen. Now it's time to take you out. "He said and I felt him picking me up in bridal style

I wrapped my hands around his neck so I won't fall down.

" You just did what I was waiting for, butterfly , just a little more wait then we will be one. "He said and took me out from the dark room.

He took me in his room and walked inside the washroom.

" You are a dirty butterfly, you need to clean up. But I don't think you can do it so as a good husband I should help you. "He said and I kept silent..

I have no energy left in me. He was telling the truth, the power of hunger is too much.

I let him strip me from my old clothes and made no attempt to cover my body.

First there is nothing he hasn't saw and second is I know if I try to cover myself it will trigger him and he will again torture me. So it's better to let him do anything he wants.

He made me stand under the shower and on it.

Hot water felt so good on my body. My sore muscles got a bit relieved.

He scrubbed my body gently with loofah and washed my hairs with shampoo…

Once done he made me wear the bathrobe and cover my hairs with a towel.

He brought a Pink plain ankle length quarter sleeves suite with blue printed dupatta for me and made me wear it. Drying my hair he carried me outside and placed me on the bed.

My body cried in pain as soon it hit the soft mattress.

I was laying on a cold and hard floor for 3 days and that's showing its effects.

"You just wait here. I will call the doctor. You need to be checked up and then eat so you can get ready for our special night tonight." He said left from there leaving me wide eyed

What did he mean by special night"? Oh god I'm so dead!

# Chapter 58 snatched Virginity

Mature content ahead

Author's pov

The doctor came and checked Turvi and bandaged her fingers that are dislocated.

"master she needs rest and proper meals. Her body is really weak." The doctor informed Aaryav who is looking at Turvi who is sleeping because of the medicines she has after having soup.

"I don't care if the doctor does anything but I need her to be fit and fine tonight. And be ready she will need you tomorrow morning." Aaryav said and the doctor felt pity for the girl

"OK master." she said and injected her some drugs that will help her to regain her energy fast and she could cope up with the devil

The doctor left from there and Aaryav laid beside Turvi. And rub her face with his nose. And inhaled her body smell.

"your smell is so fucking addictive butterfly. Your beauty is too much to handle. I lied that day about it but what to do I wanted to hurt you. Because you made me angry. You're the most beautiful girl I saw ever and I won't be able to share you with anyone. No one will ever see your naked beauty except me. "He said and licked her neck

He held her tight in his embrace and slept with her for some time.

Few hours later when Turvi woke up she found herself in the room alone.

She got up and sat down feeling a lot better than before.

Her body felt energised though she can't help but feel tired.

"mistress you woke up how are you feeling now?" trisha asked

"better then before I guess." Turvi replied

"mistress I have to make you ready for tonight." trisha said and Turvi looked horrified

"There is no way to escape this Turvi. You have chosen it yourself. You have submitted to him. And if submitting to him gives you relief then do it." she told herself and nodded

Trisha felt bad but there was no escape. She has to do it.

She makes her ready by draping a black transparent saree with black sleeveless blouse on her lean body. She didn't do any make up or made her wear any jewellery as per Aaryav's order.

He wants her to be as natural as possible.

Turvi sat there like a doll and let her do whatever she wanted to.

Once done she left and came with food.

"eat it mistress." she said and Turvi ate it without any fuss

She knows the value of food now. She will never make any fuss over food from now on.

Once done everything Trisha left from there dimming the lights as Aaryav will be coming any moment.

Turvi stood near the window and let the cold and salty air of the sea hit her body..

She closed her eyes and a single tear rolled down from her eye.

She never expected that her most awaited day would become a nightmare for her.

She wanted to do it with the person she loves and who loves her back not like this.

Suddenly she felt a hand sneaking around her bare waist and hugging her from back.

"What are you doing here butterfly? You should be on the bed waiting for me." Aaryav said as he smelled her neck, removing her hair from her back.

Her bare back is inviting him to mark it again as his previous mark is fading.

"sorry," Turvi said out of fear that he may again hurt her

"I will let it go as it's our first night together." He said and started to leave open mouth kisses on her neck making Turvi moan out loud unexpectedly

Aaryav smirked at that and Turvi felt embarrassed she didn't intend to moan like this.

He turn her around and slammed his lips on hers without any warning knocking all air out from her lungs

He groped her butt and she gasped in surprise and he just took the advantage of it by deepening the kiss more. He roamed every corner of her mouth with his tongue but got frustrated when she didn't kiss him back.

"kiss me back Butterfly." He said angrily and again slammed his lips on her and this time she responded to the kiss and that made Aaryav happy.

He took her towards the bed without breaking the kiss and pushed her on bed.

Turvi gasped for air as he was kissing her for a long time.

She inhaled greedily as much she could.

Aaryav removed his shirt and hovered over her. Removing the pallu from her chest he first squeezed her mounds harshly making her scream.

He started to pepper kisses on her neck making Turvi moan in pleasure but she felt ashamed of herself. For reacting like this. She started to cry silently and her tears touched Aaryav who was kissing her neck.

He looked up and got angry.

"why the fuck are you crying? Did I do anything to make you cry huh? If you want to cry then I will give reason for it." saying he slapped her and tied her hands with his discarded shirt with the bedpost

"you know what you just deserve to be treated as a slut nothing else." saying Aaryav again slapped her making her feel dizzy and taste the metallic taste in her mouth

She sobbed hard in pain but she knows it's only triggering him more.

He tugged at her saree and removed it from her body.

He literally ripped off her blouse and her naked mounds came at the view like last time he didn't allow her to wear any lingerie beneath.

He groaned looking at her white balls and started sticking her right nipple harshly. It's something he wanted to do with her for a long time. He wanted to suck them but that time he stopped himself as it was her punishment but not tonight.

He shaped her another nipple until it was hard as he kept sucking on another.

He left it and sucked her left nipple and bit it real hard enough to make it bleed.

Turvi screamed in pain and got another slap in return.

Aaryav bite all over her mounds and cleavage along with her neck and jaw, not leaving any place.

He wants to cover her with his marks.

He pulled her up still tied and thrusted his hard member in her mouth as he sat on her chest without giving pressure on her body.

He thrusted brutally in her mouth making her gag and choke but he didn't stop and came in her mouth.

"swallow it dare you throw it away I will do it again and again." Aaryav threaten her and she swallow it down

"good girl," he said and pat her head and

removed her underskirt and insert his 3 fingers all together and without giving her any chance to adjust he started to fuck her as he kept biting her stomach area.

Turvi felt like her body was on fire. It's hurting and burning everywhere.

She felt like he had ripped her inside apart. He is ruthlessly fucking her virgin hole making her scream hard.

"That's what you get for crying, you ungrateful bitch. I thought to give you pleasure tonight but no you don't deserve it. You deserve to be fucked like a bitch and I will do that only." saying he got rid of his pants and rolled a condom on his hard and erect member and without warning or anything he thrusted inside her dry virgin hole in one time breaking her virgin walls brutally and started thrusting inside her without giving her any time to adjust

"stop please. It's hurting please slow down." Turvi screamed and tried to get her hands free from the shirt but neither he stopped or slow down ignoring her every word he kept thrusting inside her like an animal in middle he choked her as well

Turvi's fear and his torture didn't help her

After like half an hour of her crying and screaming Aaryav hit his release for the first time where Turvi also has orgasmed.

Aaryav pulled himself out from her and threw the used condom.

Turvi felt immense pain but thought that maybe he was done with her but little did she know that it's the only start of the horrible night.

That night he took her for 5 times until she passed out in exhaustion.

# Chapter 59 humiliation

Mature content ahead

Author's pov

Turvi hissed in pain in her sleep when she felt something touching her private part.

She opened her eyes with great difficulty and found Aaryav cleaning her love hole with a wet cloth.

She wanted to go far away from him but the pain in her body reminded her to not do so.

She knows what can happen to her if she dares to deny him.

"Did I wake you up, butterfly?" he asked her in a soft voice and Turvi stared at him blankly.

"Are you going to be silent butterfly?" his voice harden and she understands what he want

"Yes you did wake me up." She said without emotions

It's like all her emotions are lost along with her virginity.

"My bad but I thought of cleaning you up. So are you feeling any pain?" he asked her like he doesn't know what can she feel after been fucked so badly by him

"My whole body is in pain." She replied

"Hmm let me give you a warm bath then I will call the doctor for you" he said and picked her up in bridal style

And as an instinct she wrapped her hands around his neck.

Her nudity in front of him isn't bothering her anymore. He has seen every inch of her body and has marked it so there is no point to hide herself and get abused again.

He put her down in the hot water filled bathtub and she hissed as it touched her sensitive body.

Aaryav also joined her in the bath tub and started to roam his hand on her bruised body.

When his finger touched her nipple, a sob left her mouth. As it hurt her a lot.

"Why do you make me so angry? See what I did with you in my anger. Just be obedient and respect me. And of course behave like a wife and I won't hurt you anymore. And yes our love making isn't counted here after having your body. I don't think that I can even stay without loving your body. "He said as he draw circles on her stomach

Silent tears made her way from her eyes but she wiped them quickly.

" I will behave like an obedient wife. "She said she wanted to add a slave in the place of her wife but she bit her tongue to not say that and got beaten by him.

" That's like a good girl. "He said and kissed her neck

But he didn't do anything else as he knows she is sore now. And any sexual activity can damage her more than he will like.

He washed her body and dried her body and did the same with himself.

He got dressed and Turvi stood there in her place in the small bath robe. Waiting for him to get finished.

She entered inside the closet but didn't see any of her clothes.

She tried to find them but not even a single item was there.

"Where can it go? I saw them here yesterday only." she thought

"Finding something butterfly?" Aaryav asked her with a smirk on his face

"I can't find my clothes." Turvi replied in a monotone voice..

"You won't find that as well." Aaryav said and Turvi looked at him blankly

"Why do you even need clothes? You're not going out of this room and if I remember clearly you always wore clothes that show your body right? You love to flaunt your body to others then what's the problem to do the same with your husband? I have all rights to see your body any time I want and if you stayed naked then that will be my treat from you. "He said and Turvi fisted her hands tightly..

Again he insulted her indirectly calling her a slut who flaunted her body.

" Please give my clothes back. "Turvi pleaded joining her hands in front of him

Begging is the only thing she could do in front of this devil.

" Why should I give you clothes? You haven't done anything to earn them now did you? In this world nothing is free butterfly what can you do to earn it?" he asked her folding his arms

Turvi knows it's some sick game of his that he is playing with her. If she want she can stay naked in this room but she won't. She can't let go her little bit self respect she has left.

" What do you want me to do so I can earn them?" Turvi asked swallowing the humiliation

"Nothing much just satisfies my Dick nothing else. You have beautiful tits and I want a tit job from you butterfly." Aaryav said shamelessly gawking at her body

Turvi knew something like this is coming. Saying no will give her few slaps and maybe more then that so she decides to oblige him

She sat on her knees in front of him like an obedient slave. She isn't an innocent girl who knows nothing about sex. She has a good knowledge about it from the Internet and porn. She knows exactly what she has to do.

"What are you waiting for? Open my pants, remove my dick and start." He order her and she nodded

She opened his pants freeing his hard manhood thinking that this man is a horny bastard who is always a bastard.

She then removed her bathrobe and held her sensitive breasts in her hand and wrapped them around his manhood. And started to push it up and down. It's like she has made an artificial hole for him to fuck.

She rubbed it hard enough to give him pain but he enjoyed it. She slowed down a little as she got tired so he took charge and thrusted between in her cleavage.

When he felt that he was about to cum he stopped her and asked her to open her mouth.

And she did it. He Thrust his manhood in her mouth and she gagged as he was too big to fit in her mouth.

"Suck me butterfly and suck me good. If you satisfy me then I will give you permission to wear full clothing along with lingerie." He said and Turvi sucked him good

She licked the top slowly then the base.

Aaryav fisted her hairs and thrusted brutally in her mouth hitting her throat every.

This time he didn't cum inside her mouth but on her face and breasts.

Turvi closed her eyes to escape the reality and pretend like nothing happened.

"Oh god butterfly you're perfect as a first timer you did great. I'm really happy you can wear clothes." Saying he put his manhood inside and zipped his pants..

He walked and unlocked a wooden door where her clothes are and gave her one pair to wear.

Turvi cleaned herself thoroughly after he dropped her in the washroom and cried hard under the shower. But putting her hand on her mouth so he won't listen to her cries.

Because she knows that her cries will cost her a lot again.

After drying herself she wore her clothes and walked out from the washroom with great difficulty. Her lady part is sore and it hurts whenever she takes a step.

With great difficulty she sat on the bed that is now clean and has no trace of previous night.

Her eyes watered more thinking about it but she wiped them.

She won't cry again because crying is wasting time. Her tears aren't going to do anything but can anyone kill their emotions and become stone?

Maybe yes they do when the pain is too much.

Trisha came with her breakfast and looked at her with pity. Her whole body is filled with marks and he has given her a strap sleeve salwar to wear so the marks are visible.

She didn't utter a word nor did Turvi.

She ate quietly as much as she could.

After her breakfast the doctor came and checked her.

Aaryav hasn't done any serious damage to her inner body like she assumed just swelling a bit. Her outer body is bruised but her inner body is better than outer.

She gives her a numbing cream to apply in her lady part to get rid of the pain and a cream for her bruised face and body along with pain killers for her body pain

Turvi hasn't looked at her face in the mirror or gotten a body because she knows she will hate it. Because it's covered with his marks

It's Trisha who detangled her hair and fills her hair partition with vermilion before serving her breakfast.

Aaryav has left her alone to sleep and gain energy so she can be ready for tonight.

He has his works as well and needs to fake support for his brother who has apparently lost his lover…..

When Turvi was alone she just asked herself a question.

"Is this my life from now on?" but got no answer in return

# Chapter 60 more trouble

Mature content ahead

Author's pov

Night time came and Turvi became scared because she knew what's coming for her tonight. Aaryav won't leave her no matter what happened. He will take her again.

Turvi is laying down covering herself in a fetus position. She is shivering in fear.

The door opened and Aaryav came in all his glory.

"Pretending to be asleep butterfly? So bad you don't know how to act." Aaryav said and Turvi closed her eyes tightly.

He came near the bed and snatched the duvet from her body making her cry out loud.

"I'm sore please leave me alone tonight. I will die if you continue it tonight," Turvi pleaded with tears

She just doesn't want to get raped again by him.

"Is it so butterfly? You're in pain?" he asked her

"Yes please," Turvi cried more and Said

"OK I won't fuck your pussy tonight," Aaryav said and Turvi sighed in relief that at least today she won't be go through the same torture but it was short lived when he took her in bridal style

She shrieked in surprise and held him tight.

"Where are you taking me?" she asked feared of his actions

"I had said I won't fuck your pussy tonight I didn't said that I will leave you." He replied and Turvi prayed to God for her safety.

He took her in a room that only has a bed and with pillars and ropes around it and a few bdsm toys.

Turvi knows few of the items courtesy movies and porn.

" Why are we here? "she asked

" Aren't you asking too many questions? "Aaryav asked and she looked down

He made her lay on her stomach and hold her legs up and tied them in a position that her body is half on the bed half in air.

" Use your hands to support your body. "Aaryav said and Turvi oblige him

He took two nipple clamps and clamped her nipples.

Turvi screamed as her nipples are really sensitive because of his earlier torture.

" Shh! Don't scream much at butterfly that I have to gag you. " He warned her and she bite her lips to not cry in pain

He got up and brought a butt plug and held it in front of her mouth.

"Suck it butterfly," He said and pushed it in her mouth

Without her will she sucked it and once done Aaryav pushed it in her butt making her feel hell uncomfortable and in pain. But neither she screamed or asked him to stop because it's a waste of time to do so.

" You're learning fast. I'm impressed." Aaryav said and spanked her butt not too hard but teasingly

He sat on the bed and gazed at her lady part lustfully. Aaryav is a man of control he never lusted over any girl not even on Turvi at start but once he saw her naked glory under his mercy he can't help but feel an urge to fuck the hell out of her and that's what we call lust.

He is now down a little so her lady part is in front of his mouth.

He licked her for the first time and Turvi moaned unintentionally. She hasn't felt like this ever before.

Getting encouragement he licked her again and again and more deeply.

Turvi is a moaning mess. She is biting her lips hard so that she can taste her blood yet she can't be quiet.

Aaryav started to tongue fuck her slowly and she shook with the pleasure. But her body strained as she binds tightening around her legs.

"The more you move the more it will become tight around you." Aaryav warned her

She stilled hearing him and cursed him in her mind but this time she checked that she is not saying it aloud in this state she can't afford to make him angry.

He kept eating her like he was starved for days. And at a time Turvi stopped her futile attempts to stop her moans and let them out freely.

She is lost in the world of pleasure and has forgotten everything else. Her mind is struck in her orgsasm she just wants to release the knot that has formed in her stomach.

But suddenly Aaryav stopped when he felt her orgsasm is near.

"Don't stop please," Turvi said

She doesn't know what she is doing, she just wants her release.

"What do you want butterfly ? Tell me I will give you." Aaryav asked her

"I want my release please" she screamed shamelessly

"Sure," saying he dipped his head in her lady part

With his tongue he gave her orgsasm and Turvi felt relieved but as soon she came out from her pleasure land she realised what she did. She just begged her rapist to give her orgasm.

Aaryav rolled a condom on his shaft and used her juices as lube and thrust inside her butt hole making her scream in pain after removing the butt plug.

"So fucking tight. Good your butt is also virgin." He said and slapped her butt

He thrusted inside her and in between played with her pussy to give her pleasure but the pain is enough to not let her enjoy the pleasure.

He released himself and discarded the used condom.

He untied her legs and removed the nipple clamps from her nipples.

"you promised to not touch me," Turvi said still in pain

"I told that you won't fuck your pussy I never said I won't fuck you. You're really awesome and learning. Just be like this and I promise you that your life will be a heaven." He said and kissed her forehead lovingly

And he stayed true to his words. He didn't do anything to her except taking sexual favours from her.

She needs to give titjob to him everyday so he will allow her to wear full clothes. And fuck her at any time he want. He didn't even spare her on her periods. He fucked her analy that time…

4 months has passed like this and Turvi has accepted that this is her life but she doesn't know that soon something is going to happen that will change everything.

# Chapter 61 something unexpected

Turvi's pov

4 months have passed and my life is the same as it was 4 months ago.

I am a caged bird in his golden cage. He treats me like that only.

Though from this 4 months he hasn't hurt me again except while fucking Me.

He hasn't slapped or whipped me because I didn't give him any chance to do so.

I have become what he wanted me to be. A submissive soft spoken weak wife and that's what I'm now.

My all fire has subsided by him. My wings are broken by him Brutally.

I don't know what to expect from my life anymore.

He doesn't allow me to go out of this house.

After a lot of pleading and giving blow jobs to him he has agreed to let me roam in the mansion at least.

What have I become? A whore who needs to give sexual favours to earn something.

I have to give him pleasure everyday so he will let me wear clothes.

When he doesn't stay here I live a bit then again I'm back to my old self.

He has left me 5 times for two days in the past for his work outside otherwise he handles everything from here only.

Those 10 days were my relief days where I don't have to face that monster.

He is a cunning bastard who knows how to use my weakness.

He showed me pictures of my loved ones. Not because I miss them but for that so I will remember that one wrong step from my side and he will hurt them.

My life is pathetic, death is a better option for me.

"Mistress," Trisha called me and I turn around to see her with my food

Another thing I haven't heard my name for so long. I have forgotten how my name sounds to others.

No one has called me from my real name.

And to be honest here only their mistress and Aaryav's butterfly is alive.

Turvi Ahuja died long back the day she submitted in front of him.

"Mistress" eat the food before the sun rises." Trisha said and I nodded

Today is Karwa chauth and I'm fasting not because I want my husband to live longer but because he has forced me to. He is not here but still has forced me to keep the fast. He will come back tonight only.

If I could I would have given him poison in his food and killed him. Probably I'm the only wife who pray that her husband die as soon as possible so she will get free from this torture.

I took the food from her hand and ate a bit. I don't want to eat at this hour of morning but I have to.

Once I finished the food Trisha left with the empty plate and bowl.

I laid down on the bed and slept because I had no work to do and I didn't get enough sleep when he was here. He doesn't let me sleep in peace neither he takes rest later like me god knows how he is not ill yet.

I feel so weak and irritated when I don't get proper sleep.

Thinking about him I dozed off.

I woke up really late at 1 pm at noon.

I felt fresh after sleeping for so long. It's probably so long that I slept this much with peace.

I sighed and got up from the bed and took shower.

Today no titjob as he isn't here. And I hope he never comes back. And just die outside only.

Strange right today women pray for their husbands long life and keep fast but I'm here praying for his early death.

But he deserves that.

He has destroyed my life completely. I just cursed my luck so badly that I caught his eyes. And he took interest in me only.

I just closed my eyes and stayed in bed only. I don't want to pass out because of exhaustion.

I have no one to talk to here as well. Trisha and Sonya can come here only for working purposes. That devil has a camera in this room he will know if anything happens here.

It's not that Sonya is the person I'm dying to talk with but still.

And with God's grace I didn't have to meet the doctor.

I just used the cream she gave me before and I'm fine with it.

"Mistress, master has asked you to get ready in this he is back as well" I heard Sonya saying as she came with a bag in her hand

"Why now?" I asked her

"Because it's evening." she said and I widen my eyes

What? It's already 5 pm? Wasn't it 2 pm when I came here?

"OK," I said and she left the bag

I checked it and it has a Red kurti with golden zig zag work over it with a red sharara of golden floral work with a red net dupatta with golden floral work over it

Typical him. All traditional..

I got ready by myself.. I don't need any help now.

Now I know how to drape a saree perfectly as well.

As I only get to wear a saree and salwar that cover me fully.

Such a hypocrite he is. Make me wear a saree at day and then at night give me lingerie to wear..

Shaking my head I go downstairs after getting ready perfectly.

The hall is decorated for this function so is the outside.

Wow so much for this fast. He really believes in this shit much it seems.

"You're looking so gorgeous like a butterfly." Came the devil's voice

"Thank you." I replied him in a monotone voice

I prefer this way myself in front of him.

"You know I'm so happy that you kept fast today and for that I want to give you some gift. After all, you're hungry all day just because of my long life." He said and I wanted to roll my eyes but I know that's a bad idea like real bad idea

He will beat me again if I do it.

" Thank you but I don't need any gift. I'm your wife and it's my duty to do so. "I told him and cringed at my own words

This is not Turvi talking, this is his butterfly talking.

" But I insist you I bet you will love this gift. If not then I will spare you tonight. "He said and I looked at him

What is this gift that he is dying to show me?

" Where is my gift? "I asked him

It would be good if I didn't like it.

" Look ahead then. "He said and I looked ahead

" Zubair come, "he said and soon his driver slash third in command came inside with someone whom I was least expecting here

# Chapter 62 Aashank is back

Turvi's pov

I can't believe my eyes now. In front of me standing is Aashank. The man I loved dearly with whom I dreamt about my future is here. But what is he doing here? Won't Aaryav kill him?

Tears gathered in my eyes and it started to flow freely.

"Aashank!" his name came out as a whisper

"See I told you that you will love my gift." Aaryav said but I didn't look at him

"You can go for your work Zubair," Aaryav said and he left

"What are you doing there brother won't you come here and hug me?" Aaryav asked him and he smiled brightly at him

He started to walk towards us and hugged Aaryav.

My eyes didn't leave them for once.

"How are you bhai?" he asked Aaryav with a smile

He didn't spare me a single glance.

"I'm more than fine. After marriage life becomes a bliss you see. I'm so happy with your Bhabhi." He said and he looked at me

"Yeah I can see that, how are you doing bhabhi?" he asked and I looked at him baffled

Why isn't he looking shocked or angry?

Did he know about it from the start?

"What happened? Why are you staring at me like that?" he asked me and I did what feel right to me

Slapped him tightly on his cheek leaving my hand print on him.

"How dare you Aashsank? How could you? How could you fake your love and trap me here? Because of you I'm here in this state living my life like a dead woman. I had dreams and you both just broke them. You destroyed my life. I regret loving you. I regret even meeting you. I regret everything I wish I never met you. Loving you is the biggest mistake of my life. "I screamed at him and got a slap from my so called husband

" Is this a way to talk with your brother in law butterfly? Apologies to him right now. "Aaryav said but I kept my mouth shut I won't fucking ask for any fucking forgiveness

" Leave it bhai. She has every right to be angry at me. After all it's because of me only. "Aashank said and my anger risen more

" Turvi, see my love or my feelings none of them were fake. I loved you truly madly deeply. "He said and I glared at him

" Then what I'm doing here as your bhabhi Aashank? "I asked him

How easy I became Turvi from doll face everything is a lie. I was a fool to believe him.

" Bhai married you and faked your death for the world including me. I wasn't aware that you are alive. I got to know a few days back and here I'm. See Turvi I was angry at him for doing this but how long will I be angry with my brother? He loved you and got married to you. Now it's over. We can't do anything about it. And if you were still pure then I would have thought about you and me but now there is no chance for us. We are finished. As you know I like exclusive things and you're used by my own brother. And I don't like used things. "Aashank said and the tears stopped a few minutes ago and started to flow freely again.

His every word pierced my heart like a needle.

" I hate you. You don't like used things and I don't like a coward man like you. At least your brother is clear in his point he shows what he is unlike you who has two faces." I hissed at him wiping my tears

"Now if you're done with this drama then let's finish the puja. I'm hungry this morning." I said with a blank face

Both brothers looked a bit shocked but said nothing.

"Sure butterfly. Let's get done with it." He said and wrapped his hand around my waist and I didn't show any emotions on my face

You don't care about me right because I'm used by your brother? Then I will show you what will hurt your ego. You will see getting used by your brother only.

I took my plate for a puja and went outside.

Both brothers followed me silently. After doing worship of Moon I worshiped my so-called husband and he fed me sweet and made me drink water breaking my fast.

I could feel Aashsank's eyes on us but I pretend like I didn't notice or better I don't give a fuck.

"You know what the gift you give me today is the worst gift anyone can give to their wife. If you want to give me something then throw him out from this place. I don't want to stay where this person is staying." I told my so called husband and walked away from there

I ran inside the room I share with Aaryav and threw myself on the bed.

Why is it me? Why? What sin I have commited?

I kept shedding tears until I heard the room door opening.

I look at the door and it's Aaryav.

Now what more he wants? Want to rub salt on my wounds? Oh that's what he wants to do. He loves to do it.

"Butterfly I'm not here to rub salt on your wounds. You see I also don't like him here. I don't want him anyway near to you or me. But he is my brother's step but still I can't just drive him away. He just wants to stay here for a few days and then leave. He knows very well that trying something with me will lead him to death. So he won't do anything. And don't worry about him. You're my wife, you don't have to think about any other man beside me. He won't disturb you. "Aaryav said and I stared at him blankly".

These brothers think I'm a doll with whom they can play as they please.

They simply don't care about me or my feelings. Aaryav never did, neither did Aashank.

I just hate this Raichand men's hope they just die and rot in hell.

"Now it's time to eat butterfly, you haven't eaten anything. If you won't eat then how will you stay healthy? Come on let's eat." He said and I decided to defy him so he will give me some marks on my body

"No I wont. I don't want to see his face. And you don't pretend like you care about me. You are the very same person who locked me in a room without food and water for 3 days. You both are selfish bastards. I hope you just die." I screamed at him and prepared myself for the hits

As I expected he grabbed my throat, cutting the air supply completely.

" Aren't you talking too much butterfly? Have you forgotten your place? "he asked removing his hand from my throat

I know very well how to push his buttons.

" Yes I have remind me my place and that is being your sex slave right? "I dared him and he smirked evilly at me

" You really like to push my buttons right? You think you're my sex slave fine then I will show you what a sex slave is. "He said and dragged me out".

# Chapter 63 punishment of foolishness

Mature content ahead

Author's pov

Aaryav dragged Turvi out from their room to his torture correction play room.

Aashank was outside so when he saw his brother dragging her with him he could not help but ask him

"Bhai, what happened? Where are you taking her?"

"Your bhabhi has forgotten her place and the rules so I'm going to teach her some lessons." Aaryav said with a wicked smirk.

"Bhai but she fasted today don't you think it will be too much for her?" Aashank asked and Aaryav raised his eyebrows

"You don't have to worry about my wife ,brother. You stay here for a few days, spend time and then leave. Don't interfere  between husband and wife." Aaryav said and Aashank fisted his hand but nodded mutely".

Turvi just looked at both brothers blankly. She is trying to do something but what she herself doesn't know.

Aaryav dragged her and she just looked at Aashsank but he averted his eyes from her.

He threw her on the bed and tied her up and gagged her as well.

"Today i will show you what a sex slave is." Aaryav said and brought a vibrator

He tore her clothes like an animal , making her naked in seconds.

He pushed the vibrator inside her dry lady part making her cry out loud. But due to the ball gag her cry came as muffled sobs.

"What happened butterfly? Already crying? Sex slaves doesn't cry so easily

You should have been habitual of it by now right?" Aaryav asked as he slapped her breasts harshly

He started the vibrator at a high speed making her moan out loud.

"Enjoying the pleasure huh?" he asked her as he sat down beside her

He pinched her nipples making her hiss in pain.

"Your body is so empty. It's like I haven't left my marks on you for so long." Aaryav said as he eyed her body

He again lit a cigarette and took a long puff.

"Remember it butterfly? How did I mark you as mine? Oh sorry how will you remember you were unconscious that day but today you're in your sense. I will again mark your beautiful body mine." Aaryav said and Turvi shook her head with tears flowing without any control.

She is regretting her foolish decision to rile him up. She forgot what a monster Aaryav can be.

Aaryav took the cigarette and pressed it on her collarbone making her scream as it burned her skin.

"Did you feel the burn ,butterfly? I feel the same when you disobey me and disrespect me." Saying he dragged the cigarette from her collarbone to her cleavage

Turvi thrashed but the binds restricted her movements.

The vibrator inside her wasn't helping her anyways.

She has reached her orgasm once but she is not feeling any pleasure in it..

Aaryav placed the cigarette on her chest and stomach area leaving burn marks everywhere.

Once satisfied with her upper body, he turned her on her stomach making her cry more.

"You know what I'm not liking. It's no fun when I don't hear you pleading." Aaryav said and removed her gag ball

"Please stop it. Please forgive me I'm sorry. I won't be disobedient ever. I swear I won't say anything ever please leave me it's hurting. Please!" Turvi screamed as soon as he removed the gag

"Why aren't you my sex slave?" he asked tracing his name mark that has faded now

"No I'm not. I'm your wife. Please leave me please." Turvi said while hiccuping

"My bad you're late to understand it." saying he again marked his name on her body with cigarette

Turvi cried, screamed, pleaded but everything goes in deaf ears.

"And I'm done, let's see what about your pussy." Saying he turned her again and got up from the bed .

Turvi has orgasmed for 3 times and her body is weak now.

The all day long fast then this torture is taking a toll on her.

Her body has given up on protesting.

" Hmm this vibrator did a lot of adventure inside you now it's my time." Saying Aaryav untied her and picked her up

"Today you will ride me and if you stop then I will again put this vibrator inside you and will leave it like this tomorrow morning." Aaryav threatened and Turvi nodded..

She doesn't want it inside her all night. She is already in enough pain.

And this pain is invited by her only. No one did nothing but her.

Aaryav laid down removing his clothes and settled Turvi on top.

Her back is facing him and her front is facing the door.

He want to look at her mark as he fuck her that's why he chose this position and he want her to participate as well.

Once he entered her she hissed in pain but bit her lips to not scream.

She started to move slowly and clumsily as it was her first time on top.

Aaryav didn't do anything but enjoyed whatever she was doing.

At a point she stopped as she just couldn't go on. Her body was giving up.

When she stopped Aaryav understood that her body had given up so he started to move his hips and thrusted inside her.

He did it until he felt his orgasm coming near.

He removed himself from her lady part and got up from the bed.

"on your knees." He order her and she obliged .

"Suck me." He order her as in hurry he hasn't used any protection .

She was on pills but still he doesn't want to take any chances.

Turvi obliged him silently fearing that disobeying him could again lead her to the same punishment.

She started to suck him but he wasn't satisfied so he started to thrust in her mouth hitting her throat making her gag.

He climaxed in her mouth and asked her to swallow it.

And she did it without delaying.

She just fell down on the bed as he pushed her.

"That's like a good slave. Now you know what a sex slave means? Though I have spared you because today you fasted for my long life." Aaryav said and Turvi thought that if it's his sparing then what will be his full punishment?

She shuddered remembering her past punishments.

Her whole body is burning and hurting because of the cigarette burns.

Her thinking session broke as she felt him inside her butt.

She didn't realise that when he turned her upside down.

He fucked her analy without using any lubricant or something.

"Please leave me," Turvi screamed but got a harsh slap on her butt

"Never ever say to stop or leave you because I won't do that ever." He said and slapped her butt again.

His torture on her weak body continues until she passed out.

But still he didn't leave her until he was satisfied.

# Chapter 64 betrayal

Turvi's pov

Pain and pain that's all I'm feeling but I deserve this.

I deserve it for my foolishness and for loving a person like Aashank.

I deserve it….

"Ahh!" I hissed as I doctor applied some ointment on my burn marks.

She has seen me naked so many times that I don't feel uncomfortable with her anymore.

Now my nudity doesn't bother me anymore nor it make me feel anything. It's like I have accepted that I have to be naked in front him so he can fuck me and in front of doctor so she can treat my wounds given by him.

My whole body is destroyed by him; he has ruined me successfully.

"Why do you provoke him mistress? See what he has done to you." The doctor said and I laughed dryly wincing a little

"I just want to die. If I provoke him then maybe he will kill me in his rage?" I said

She just looked at me with pity. That's what I'm now a pathetic person who gets pity from everyone.

She dressed my body with bandages and left after giving me some medicines.

" How is my butterfly feeling? I hope I wasn't harsh much? "said the psychotic bastard who burned me and fucked the daylight out of me

I kept mum not even bothering to look at him.

I closed my eyes pretending that I'm sleeping because of medication.

I felt him caressing my face tenderly but then suddenly I got a harsh slap on my face that made me cry out loud

"When I ask something I expect answers from you butterfly. And you have to answer this fucking well." He said or I say scream

"I'm tired, I need rest." I told him holding my cheek

"Then answer it in the place of ignoring me." He said calmly smiling like a fucked up creature

"sorry," I apologise again

"Apology accepted. OK now eat, you haven't eaten anything for a long time." He said and made me to eat my breakfast

Once done he pat my head like a child and asked me to sleep.

I laid on the bed at an angle as my front and back both were burnt and my vagina was sore very much.

I slept in some time because of the medication.

Few days passed and now I'm better than before.

He hasn't beaten me again but yes didn't spared me as well. He has fulfilled his all sex cravings.

I haven't seen Aashank these days whenever I step out of my room.

I last saw him that night.

I am ordered to wear salwar or kurti with leggings because aashank is here and I'm not allowed to show my skin and saree.

Currently I'm wearing a Quarter sleeves pink color kurta with silver border with pink sharara and a pink dupatta with silver work over it

It covers me perfectly without any problems.

Aaryav is out, he isn't here. Aashank is still here. Why I don't know isn't he satisfied to see me getting tortured by his brother? Or does he want me to die?

I go outside as I am feeling suffocating in that room.

Whenever Aaryav is not here I go outside of the room. Though he knows about it, he never says anything about it.

Downstairs I saw Aashank who was thinking something. For a moment I felt to leave but no why should I leave? I did nothing wrong but still I'm going through from this hell then why should I bother?

I sat down on the couch with a little difficulty as I'm still sore down there. I always stay sore because of his torture on my body.

He looked at me but then looked down.

Good he should look down only.

"How are you doing?" he asked me

"Alive as you can see." I told him pointing towards my body blankly

"Why did you provoke bhai? Don't you know the consequences?" he asked me and I stared at him.

"I don't fear the consequences anymore. Aashank now death seems pretty much welcoming than this pathetic life I'm living with your monster brother. I won't say why you did with me or those things because I know you're not any better than him. You're also a killer like him. Maybe you would have tortured me like this only. Or maybe worse or less. But you both brothers are the same. Cold blooded murders "I said looking dead at his eyes

He looked hurt at my words but didn't say anything. What he can even say? I said the truth only.

" Bhabhi, I know you have every reason to hate us and be mad but don't provoke him so much that he will end up killing you. I know you're living a horrible life but that's your destiny." He said

"Aashu you were my love Right? You loved me? OK I accept that you don't want me anymore because..." taking a pause i continued

"Because now I'm used by your brother not pure anymore but I was your friend right? Owing to that friendship I'm asking your help Aashu please save me. You don't have to accept me back nor I will go back to my family. Let them think I'm dead no problem with that , but please help me from escaping here. Please help otherwise I will die here. "I told him crying

I don't know what I'm doing or why but I just want to leave from here.

" Bhabhi you're my brother's wife and I love you but I have respect for my brother and his wife. Yes, in the past I lied to him , but that time was different. Now the situation is something else and I can't or won't help you to escape him. You're married to him and until death you both cannot be aparted you have to be together. "He said and I got angry

" I was right, you're just like him, a heartless bastard. I just hope you both die. I hate you Aashank Raichand more than I ever loved you. Thank you for giving me this gift for loving you blindly. "I screamed at him.

" You can say anything you want but I won't betray my brother anymore you're now his wife so be in that only. You're my sister in law and I am your brother in law so respect our relationship don't ever say these things to me ever. "He said looking at me and I only cried.

Why am I so pathetic?

" What's happening here? "I heard Aaryav asking

I turn to see him standing on the entrance.

" Your wife wants me to help her to escape from here but I denied her. Now handle her on your own but what are you doing here? Aren't you supposed to be in a meeting? "Aashank asked him but I started shaking in fear".

If he kills me then the game is over but if he again torture me then I'm dead.

" I forgot some important files. That's why I'm back. Thank god I was back. Otherwise I would not have known what my wife is planning. Now you can go I will handle her in my style." He said, giving me a sinister smirk.

Maybe today I will be free from this torture. By getting death.

# Chapter 65 his side

Aashsank's pov (surprise)

I stood there still as I saw Bhai Dragging her with him. Her eyes held fear for him for his torture. The girl I knew is nowhere to be found in her. She is not the bold and carefree Turvi I loved.

And who is the reason behind it? Me. It's me because of whom she is here.

Her eyes held hatred for me that I deserve for hurting her.

But it's important to execute my real plan. She has to bear this pain to get freedom from him permanently.

I went back to my room and slammed the door hard.

How could I not see what he was playing for? How? Was I that blind?

Maybe yes because he is my brother and I was supposed to believe him blindly.

I know I don't deserve an angel like her but I was selfish to drag her in my life and now she is suffering because of me.

I still remember the first day I saw her in college. She was making faces on some topic and I was watching her keenly.

Her laughter was music for me.

She thinks she saw me first but how wrong she was.

I saw her before but then I tried to maintain some distance from her but she is turvi and no one can ignore her presence. She had something in her that attracted people towards her.

She is something different.

I lied to her about everything because truth won't give me anything.

I am a killer who kills without any mercy who never blinks his eyes before killing someone.

But for her I turned into a love sick puppy. I loved her. I love her and I will still love her until I die as I promised.

She is the first one in my life and she will be the last.

When that day I got the news of her death I was in shock will be an understatement. I had become a stone. She was gone in front of my eyes.

I cried day and night for her and cursed myself.

Bhai came and consoled me but something was off that I could not catch.

Months passed but he stayed in his private island where he never stayed for long.

I decided to do some research and caught Zubair who know every fucking thing bhai do.

He was reluctant to tell me but when I emotionally blackmailed him he spilled the beans and I was shocked.

I couldn't grasp the fact that my own brother did this with me. He created a facade and we all believe him.

He married my love, my doll face and here I'm mourning over her death.

Rage filled me but I kept my calm because my brother is still the boss and if I just confront him then he can even kill me.

After whatever he did I don't believe him a bit.

He can do anything without any remorse.

I hatched a plan to get here and see what's going on.

If she would have been happy with bhai I would have backed down. I would have never come between them but the scene is different.

I did many things to gain his trust that I'm over her and I'm happy in my life.

He did believe me at a point.

He is treating her worse than an animal.

Why I don't know .. I had to hurt her to gain his blind trust in me.

I will do the same as he did to me.

I watched with my eyes the result of his torture.

She was in pain all because of me.

I talked with Trisha and the doctor who told me what she was facing from the time she came here.

I was in tears but the fire in me lit as well. I was more determined to save her from this hell and send her somewhere safe.

Today when she asked for help I was about to tell her about my plan but I saw bhai standing outside so I had to play with her once again. I would have never left her because she was raped by

my own brother. My love for her isn't that weak. Whatever happened that has nothing to do with her.

I know he will again torture her but it will be last time he is doing so.

I waited until he left for his work again.

I know he won't stay here as he have an important deal to crack.

"Aashank," he called my name and I go outside

"Yes bhai," I said and looked at him

He has a little bit of blood on his body. And that's not his blood that's confirmed.

"I have locked your Bhabhi in the dark room make sure she won't come out until I come back and yes give her food only once a day no extra water no treatment for her as well. She wants to escape right now she will see what happens when she dares to think this." He said with a dark psychotic look on his face

" OK bhai, "I nodded hiding my anger very well

I can't show him my true Feelings yet. I have to wait for the correct time to strike.

" OK I'm leaving now I will be back tomorrow morning. "He said and I nodded

He left and I started working on my plan.

I know it will be difficult for her but I have to do it.

I gave Trisha some drugs and asked her to give it to everyone so they won't be able to catch her or inform bhai.

I will give you a freedom doll face for the sake of our love and friendship. I will free you from this hell hole.

Turvi's pov

Pain is a really small word to describe what I'm feeling right now.

He has crossed his every limit this time. He has whipped me, raped me, choked me.

Left his ugly marks on me to show me that I belong to him

He hasn't made me naked but my all clothing is teared because of the whip. He just teared my pants off and fucked me.

I won't forgive those brothers ever. I will pray for their pathetic death from God.

They are monsters, nothing else.

He has locked me this time for god knows how long.

Suddenly the door of the room opened and I curled myself in a ball I can't take his inhuman torture anymore.

"Doll face," I heard Aashank's voice and that made my blood boil in anger.

# Chapter 66 caught you

Mature content ahead

Turvi's pov

I glared at him with pure hatred. What does he want from me now? Isn't he happy seeing me in this state? He should, right?

"What do you want, Aashank? After sending me in this hell what the fuck you want from me? Or you're here to see my destruction and beaten state? Or better you're here to rape me as well? Yeah go ahead. You also rape me.

What am i? Nothing absolutely nothing but a body that can satisfy your needs. Go ahead. I'm here for you. " I told him crying

Why is he here after everything?

He looked hurt by my words but I know it's fake it's all fake.

He and his monster brother both are the same. Evil and heartless creatures.

" Doll face I know why are you saying this and believe me I know I deserve more than this. But one thing I will say that I never lusted for you. Nor did I love your body.

I always loved you and my love has thrown you in this hell. I know you won't believe my words but I'm here to help you. I will help you to escape from this hell and start your life with a new point.

I maybe or maybe won't be a part of your life but I will do my best to help you. I know it's really hard to believe the person who has deceived you once but believe me I'm still your Aashu who loves you. Truly madly deeply. Your virginity doesn't matter to me, it never did . My words may show that I care but for you I don't.

I am here to help you. Bhai has given me the responsibility of your security. And he won't come back before tomorrow.

He has ordered me to give you food once. So I will come back later when I feel everyone is drugged.

You will run away from here and go through the forest. I know it's risky but we have to do it.

At the end of the forest you will find a small yacht ready to go and hide there. I will go there once I get a chance and then we both will escape from here. Then we will go somewhere where he can't find us.

I have to part my ways with you because he will catch you via me and I don't want that.

I have seen love and dark obsession in his eyes for you. Yes love is there as well but his love is toxic and twisted. "He said and I stared at him blankly

" Is it your some sick game then please spare me from this. I'm tired of this. I can't bare any more torture of his. If you want to kill me then kill me but don't make me go through hell I'm begging you. "I told him jointing my hands in front of him

" Doll face, it's not a plan or game. I'm serious. I did it with you so he can trust me with your security and then I will take advantage of it. Now don't question me and wait for me. Sorry I can't do anything about your clothes. You have to run in this way only. "He said and got up

" I will be back, "saying he left from here

I sat there pondering over what he said to me. What to do? Should I believe him? But what if he is lying? Or what if he is saying the truth?

I have to take the risk. I can't leave this opportunity if this gets me my freedom then I'm ready for it.

Aashank came after sometime and showed me the path that I have to follow..

I am running in the massive woods to save my life from that psychotic bastard. It's my last chance. It's night time and the darkness is making it impossible for me to watch anything around my surroundings. I don't know where I'm going or where I will go or how I will reach my family but I know only that.

He is behind me and I know if I let him catch me he will kill me for sure.

Aashank has promised that he will take me far away from here but how I don't know. Right now I really don't know anything.

My feets are bleeding because I'm bare feet. My dress is torn courtesy goes to that psychotic bastard who has raped me.

My whole body is covered with bruises and cuts and obviously those ugly hickeys. My legs and body is aching because of his torture but I can't stop. I have to go where Aashank asked me to.

"catch her if I didn't find her you all are as good as dead," I heard him screaming

Oh no he is coming for me. What should I do?

How did he get to know that I tried to run away? Wasn't he gone for the meeting?

That means it's a trap of aashank to make me suffer and I just stepped on it. Why I forget that he is his brother they both share the same fucked up blood.

He will take his brother's side only.

I don't have time to think over it now I have to run but it's like fate isn't on my side. It was never from the day that a psychotic monster entered my life in the disguise of an angel.

I tripped on a tree trunk and fell on the ground hitting my head hard.

I'm sure it's bleeding as I can feel the blood trailing down from my forehead to my cheek.

And my ankle is twisted as well I can't run anymore I have to hide.

I tried to get up as I heard their footsteps.

I hide my body behind a massive tree. I don't care if it has poisonous insects or snakes. I will be happy if they bite me and end my pathetic life.

I hugged myself tightly as I felt them approaching me..

Oh god please save me this time he will kill me or worse break my legs because of my attempt.

"butterfly where are you?" he asked in a sing sang voice that made me gulp hard

Whenever he seems happy when I disobey him it's become worse than a nightmare for me. He is better angry than not happy.

"Butterfly, you know that I don't like to play hide and seek, right? Because i always catch my victims easily. Such a boring game. Will you come out on your own or you want me to drag you out? Believe me if you come out I may think to not hurt you much but if I dragged you then you will be praying to God that you can walk again on those long legs. I like them wrapped around me when I make love to you but I won't mind to cut them off so you won't try anything like this again."He said in his cherry voice

Oh god please don't let him find me he is serious about it. He will do it.

I hold my breath so he won't be able to hear it and catch me. I can't take risks anymore, he can do anything.

" Tsk tsk butterfly I call you  butterfly that doesn't mean that you will fly here and there.. I give you chance a fucking chance to save you from punishment but you have to lose that as well now don't fucking blame me for what happens next.." He screamed the last part in pure anger

I guess today I will die like the way he wants..

I closed my eyes in anticipation of his next action but silence is the only thing that greeted me.

He is playing with me. He knows I'm here. He was trying to play.

Everything has become silent, no sound can be heard.

I couldn't hold my breath. I'm inhaling very slowly.

This silence is the silence before the storm. The storm that will end my life. I did many things but never tried to run away after he killed that girl.

He has punished me for those deeds but this time he will kill me. It's better to be killed.

"Gotcha butterfly, what did you think that I won't be able to get you?" he said suddenly coming in front of me making me scream hard

# Chapter 67 end of an innocent soul

Mature content ahead

Author's pov

"What did you think butterfly? That escaping from me is that easy?" Aaryav asked and Turvi shook her head in no hurriedly

She is tied in a chair right now in his basement.

"Then why did you dare to escape butterfly?" he asked wiping the blood from her forehead

"I'm sorry," Turvi said crying hysterically

"You will be a sorry butterfly after I'm done with you." Aaryav said with a smile and that scared her more

"Please, I'm sorry dont hurt me. I won't try to do something like this ever." She said crying

"You're saying to not hurt you but then what about me? What about my hurt? You also hurt me right? Then what about it? I was testing you both. Do you find me a fool who will believe his tricks? I am the Lord of mafia for nothing. Making me fool is impossible. "He said grinning like the psycho he is

" Now it's time for your punishment. Your lover boy is already getting his punishment. "Aaryav said and Turvi looked at him shock

" Please don't hurt him. He is your brother. Hurt me but don't hurt him please. "Turvi pleaded

She doesn't want Aashank to suffer because of her.

" Uff so much love and desperation for him huh? And this tempts me more to hurt you. "He said said and Turvi screamed as a sharp glass piece is stabbed on her feet

" This is the same legs right that helped you to go away from me? "he asked and stabbed another feet of her

" Ahhh! "she screamed in pain as blood gushed out from her wound

He stabbed her feet with glass pieces many times and made her feets a bloody mess.

" Now lets meet your lover-boy shall we? "He asked and Turvi shook her head no

Two men came with a badly bruised and Drugged Aashank.

If he wasn't drugged then no one can take him down. He is more than capable of handling all of them together.

" Hello brother, hope you're doing well. My men did a good job I see. I couldn't do it by myself, sorry for that as I was busy with your doll face." Aaryav said and Aashank looked at them

His eyes held pain and regret along with Anger.

He is angry at himself that he could not understand Aaryav's trap and step into it and land both of them here.

He looked at Turvi who was tied up and in very much pain.

" So much love for each other. Have some shame for both of you. You both are related as Brother in law and sister in law." Aaryav said and Aashank glares at him

He is not able to move his body due to drugs but he can understand everything and can talk as well.

" She was my fiance. She was supposed to be my wife not yours. "Aashank said

" Exactly was, she was but now she is my wife. But it's actually not your fault it's our family genes that are fucked up. We always want what doesn't belong to us in the first place but once we own it we own it. End of the discussion. And I own her. Her body, her soul, her mind, everything I own. "Aaryav said

" Maybe you own everything or her but not her heart because that's a place she has only given me to rule. You may rule her body but the ruler of her heart is me and it will be me till I'm alive you can't own her heart you bastard. Never ever you can take my place in her heart . " Aashank said and got a hard kick on his stomach that made him stumble on the floor while coughing blood

" What did you say? That I can't own her heart huh? Who needs her heart anyways I'm not interested in her heart nor I was interested in her body but now that changed she is a good fuck you know. The wild girl is now my submissive obedient wife. She please me as a wife should. And if your life is the reason you own her heart then don't worry. That's gonna change because today I'm going to kill you. You betrayed me big time and free me from the promise I made with my father. "Aaryav said

" Nooo! No please don't kill him. Kill me but don't kill him. I beg you please. I will do everything you want me to do. I won't disobey you ever but please leave him" Turvi pleaded

Right now she doesn't care about her life. She wants to save his life because he is in this situation because he wanted to help her escape.

A loud thud voice echoed in the room as Aaryav slapped her.

" You fucking whore in front of your husband you're begging for your ex lover's life. You want me to leave him alone right?" he asked and Turvi nodded

"Hmm fine I will leave him if you let me fuck you in front of him. Let him know who fucking owns you." Aaryav said and both Aashank and Turvi looked shocked and disgusted by his this demand

"Will you leave him if I let you?" Turvi asked him

"Yes i will."Aaryav said

" Noo! You won't do anything like that. I would like to die better than living this. If you save me like this then I will kill myself later because I can't live like this. "Aashank screamed

" He wants butterfly to die. "Aaryav said and took an injection from the nearby table

" No stop. "Turvi said but Aaryav ignored her and inject him with the liquid

" Now you have exactly 15 minutes more to live then bye bye. And don't worry I won't let you die getting bored I will give you a chance to watch me fucking her. "Aaryav said and go near Turvi and open her hands and legs

She wanted to run towards Aashank but she could not.

" Want to go towards him? Go I'm not stopping you but you have to reach him in 5 minutes. "Aaryav said and looked at her amusingly

She crawled on the floor to go towards Aashank but her body was too weak and bruised to go there.

" tick tock tick tock time is running butterfly. "Aaryav mocked

He was getting happy seeing them like this.

On the other hand, Aashank was also trying to reach Turvi but couldn't. They both were trying and even came close but Aaryav kicked Aashank and he rolled back far away

" Times up, now show time." Aaryav said and dragged her back

He undressed her body removing the tored clothes and undressed himself.

"Leave her!" Aashank said and coughed more blood

He closed his eyes to avoid this.

"If you didn't open your eyes then I will rape her till she bleed to death. Or better ask my men to have her." Aaryav said and Aashank looked at him

He can't find his elder brother in him anymore. The brother who loved him so much who raised him as his kid.

The person who is standing there in front of him is a monster, a heartless bastard.

He focused his eyes on Turvi's which were filled with tears.

They both looked at each other when Aaryav entered her in one go making her scream in pain.

Her lady part is already sore because of his torture earlier

He choked her and keep thrusting inside her mercilessly

But neither she screamed or protested.

She was looking at Aashank who was taking his last breath.

"I'm sorry. I failed. I love you." Aashank mouthed and closed his eyes for forever

Turvi knows that he is gone. His nose has bled as well.

After like 10 minutes more he finished himself inside her and looked at her to find her looking at Aashank's dead body.

" He is a dead butterfly. He is gone and it's all because of you. Because of your selfishness. Because you wanted to escape from me, see what happened, he died all because of you. Everyone who will try to snatch you from me will end like this. If I kill you that's a different thing but no one can take you away from me. "He said but he doesn't know that she isn't listening to him anymore

Her mind has shut everything down. He didn't knew that he not only killed Aashank but he killed Turvi as well not maybe physically but mentally.

# Chapter 68 confessions

Author's pov

Aaryav is sitting on the couch and looking intensely at his wife or I say slave who is getting treatment from the lady doctor who has tears in her eyes but she can't show it to the devil who is sitting in front of her.

She knows what a monster he is with her but what today he did is beyond her imagination.

How can someone stoop so low to kill their own brother and rape his wife in front of him?

She thought and prayed that may Aaryav kill Turvi in his anger very soon because escaping alive from here is impossible so Death is the only chance of her getting peace. And the sooner it comes to her the sooner she will be free.

"How is she?" Aaryav asked in a cold tone that is more cold then his normal voice

She scoffed mentally and cursed him a thousand times in her mind.

After doing this inhuman torture on her he has the audacity to ask that how is she.

"Alive," is the word she wanted to use answering but she knows that will earn her a bullet on her forehead and like everyone she loves her life as well.

"She is not such a good condition master. Her vaginal walls are damaged. Her forehead got stitches and most importantly her legs are highly injured. She needs at least 2 months to walk again. In short if we need her alive then she needs complete rest and good food along with medicines. If this continues then I'm afraid that she will not survive for long. "The lady doctor said in a monotone voice

" Hmm, good the long her legs stay useless the fear of consciousness will be stronger in her mind. Good. Now you can go. "Aaryav said and the doctor left

He got up and sat beside Turvi who was unconscious…

He traced her forehead where the stitches are over the bandage.

" Why did you try to escape from me butterfly? See what I had done to you. How many times have I told you to not disobey me and make me angry but it's like you have vowed that you won't listen to me ever. Every time I try to be good with you but in return you give me what I despise. But no matter what happens I won't kill you nor let you die. Because you're mine. I can do anything I want to do with you and no one can stop me from doing that.

And I won't ever share you. And I mean it. I just wanted to scare you off. I will kill anyone who will eye you.

I didn't even let my brother see you. I covered your body with mine. He only saw your face.

Ahh! My brother and I have to pay him for my last visit. I will come back after meeting him soon. "He said to her and kissed her bruised fingers

He got up and left her in their room.

He goes outside where Aashank's body is kept.

He sat down on the floor looking at his dead body.

He has ordered others to leave them alone.

" Hello brother, "he said looking at Aashank's body

" This is the same hand that has raised you when you were a 5 years old kid and it's the same hand that ended your life today. I am sorry for killing you but I'm not sorry for taking my butterfly away from you.

She was mine from the day she kissed me. I once thought to share her among us but then my possessive side kicked in and I could not.

She is my greatest possession, my obsession, whom I can't lose at any cost. If she would have stayed away from me not tempt my devil then I may have left her but nope she didn't do it but keep challenging me. Defying me. And it's the consequences she is facing now.

And before dying you said that I won't be able to win her heart ever right? You will be the ruler of her heart? Well that's going to change as well.

I will own her by every single way including her heart.

Till date I thought that I'm only torturing her because I want to break her but the real reason was I was jealous and afraid.

That she loves you and will never stop loving you. She should love her husband. I'm her husband but no she doesn't.

I just wanted her to obey me and love me because I love her as well in my own twisted way.

And when I realised it? When you set her free from my cage. I feared what if I couldn't find her? Or something would happen to her in that forest?

That fear made me realise that I love her. I was running away from my own feelings.

So thank you for making me realise my feelings. You both were not made for each other even if you were by God my devil changed it and gave her to me. She is mine till we are alive and by any chance if I die then I will kill her with me as well.

Betrayal runs in our blood and all for a woman. That time it was my mother now it's my butterfly we brothers always like the same girl I don't know why.

History seriously repeats itself. I didn't plan to kill you but you didn't leave any option for me. I will miss you. You were a great brother until you betrayed me. " Aaryav said and hold Aashank's lifeless hand in his own

He got up from the floor and asked his men to get his pyre ready.

He didn't wait for Turvi to wake up so she could take part in it.

He knows she is traumatized enough and now will be in her limits.

He himself gave fire to his body as his elder brother.

He saw him turn into ashes thinking that he eliminated his biggest enemy but he doesn't know what future holds for him no one gets happiness after destroying someone.

# Chapter 69 she is pregnant

Author's pov

3 months later

"Mistress!" Trisha called Turvi but she didn't reply but just looked at her

"It's time to eat your lunch." She informed and Turvi nodded mutely

She tried to got up from the bed but couldn't as her legs are still weak she need a little help

Trisha was about to help her when a sudden voice stopped her in her tracks.

"You can go Trisha I will handle her." Aaryav said and without wasting a moment Trisha left immediately

She finds it poisonous for her to even breathe in same air as him but sadly she can't leave until he lets her go.

After all he is the king…

Turvi lowered her head and stared at her lap.

She didn't look at him…

"Let's eat outside today what say?" he asked but got no verbal answer from her like from past 3 months

Turvi hasn't uttered a single word after that incident. She didn't react when she got to know that Aashank is dead and his last rituals are done.

She didn't react when she could not walk as well. She started to behave like a puppet. Whose strings are in Aaryav's hand. The way he wants her to move she will do that only.

"Butterfly shall we go?" he asked her softly earning a small nod from her side

He helped her to walk down from the stairs.

He has also changed his ways in the past 3 months. He hasn't raped her for once neither hit her or abused her in any way. Rather he is behaving like an ideal husband who is helping his ill wife.

He tried many things but in return always got a blank stare or small nod from her.

He is dying to listen to her sweet voice and scream and sob her moans. He is missing everything very badly.

They both sat on the chairs in the seaside that were placed there with a table for them.

Turvi stared at the vast sea with empty eyes. She has no fire or spark left in her. Everything is gone with Aashank now she doesn't even want to go out from here and see her family dead.

She has accepted her life and has made herself his obedient wife.

Though she could not leave her bed, she never tried to get up. The girl who once loved to dance who's passion was dance now she doesn't want to even walk on her legs by her own.

Aaryav has successfully killed her soul leaving the hollow shell behind.

The day is windy and the sun isn't showing as well making the weather pleasant but Aaryav isn't happy.

Aaryav looked at Turvi and she looked at the sea. And that irritated him more.

"Look at me," he said and without saying anything she looked at him

Aaryav always wanted her like this, an obedient and submissive wife but when it happened he felt like something was off , something wasn't right.

He isn't liking her silence not because he feels bad but his inner sadist can't punish her for any reason now.

She hasn't given him a single reason to hurt her in any way. She is very obedient and listens to his every command like a slave.

He wants her to do something so he can punish her but at the same time he wants to have her heart but that seems impossible as she is still mourning Aashank's death.

She still loves him and removing him from her memories are really hard for Aaryav but he vowed to do that anyhow.

"Do you want to go back to India? I will take you back if you behave." Aaryav said but Turvi just shook her head

Aaryav can't understand what she is trying to do? Why isn't she saying anything? He didn't get her checked by a Psychiatrist because he doesn't want her to share their personal moments with anyone and by personal it means the time he tortured her inhumanly.

He expected her to scream at him, curse him, cry and try to harm him but she didn't neither she harmed herself. Not for once she tried to commit suicide and that make him shocked because he kinda expected that from her.

"Do you want anything?" he asked and she shook her head in no

He sighed and served food on two plates and asked her to eat…

She started to eat silently but she wasn't feeling like eating. She is feeling like vomiting everything.

It's happening with her a lot but she didn't tell anyone.

She never shares anything with anyone about her health as well. Nor is she in a state of mind when she can think about these things.

She ate half of her food as she could not eat further.

"What happened? Don't you want to eat?" Aaryav asked looking at her half finished plate

She shook her head in no and waited for a tight slap but that never came.

She sometimes wonders why he stopped abusing her like earlier. But thought maybe it's some part of his sick game.

She sat there and played with her mangalsutra (nuptial chain)

When she felt dizzy suddenly. Her head was spinning badly so she drank water but it didn't help.

Aaryav is eating so he didn't paid much attention to her but his eyes shot towards her when he heard the thud sound and found Turvi unconscious on the floor

He got up and carried her in his arms immediately.

Taking her in their room he called the doctor who checked Turvi after a long time.

In between she came to check her leg but not her body as it had no wounds for a few months and that surprised her as well. How come the monster spared her?

But her eyes widened when she checked her this time.

She checked her twice thinking that she might be wrong but no she isn't.

Her eyes filled with tears thinking about Turvi's future.

Turvi has got her senses back and now is staring at the doctor who is on the verge of tears now.

How will she survive now is the only question roaming in her head.

"What happened to her suddenly? Why did she faint? Is she fine? " Aaryav asked and the doctor gulped In fear but she know she has to tell

"Master she.. She is fine, it's common in these situations." She replied making Aaryav confused

"If she is fine then why did she faint?" Aaryav asked her sternly

"She fainted because She is pregnant master." The doctor said shocking both of them

# Chapter 70 changed

Author's pov

"She is what?" Aaryav's voice boomed in the silent room breaking the silence

"She is a 3 months pregnant master." The lady doctor said

"But how is that possible? When I…." Aaryav stopped in middle as he remembered the unfateful night when he killed Aashank and raped Turvi

That night he didn't use any protection and he doesn't remember what he did with her in his anger.

And the child is his no doubt in that..

All 3 of them know very well how and when she conceived the baby.

"Am I pregnant? A baby is growing inside my tummy?" Turvi asked the doctor

She finally broke her silence 3 months ago.

"Yes mistress you have a 3 month old life inside you." The doctor said and a smile came on Turvi's face

She placed her hand on her stomach that had a very tiny bump almost invisible.

"Can I see it?" she asked the doctor

The doctor nodded but looked at Aaryav for his permission but he was busy staring at Turvi who was smiling like a fool.

And caressing her stomach.

The girl who didn't talk in 3 months no matter what happened is now smiling ear to ear

"Show her the baby." He said to the doctor and the doctor nodded her head

Soon enough all the machines were set in his room.

"Mistress, uncover your stomach. I need to do an ultrasound." The doctor said and Turvi removed her saree pallu from her front exposing her stomach

Aaryav kept looking at her without blinking his eyes. His face is blank no one can read what's hidden behind this blank look

" See mistress that tiny dot that's your baby." The lady doctor said and Turvi looked at the monitor

Her eyes brimmed with unshed tears but this time they are happy tears.

Aaryav also looked at the monitor but his face was blank like earlier.

"That's my baby?" Turvi asked the doctor

"Yes it is. Wait a second it seems you're carrying twins. See another dot there." The doctor said and Turvi covered her mouth in shock

"Twins?" She asked shocked

"Yes," the doctor replied

"Aren't you happy?" the doctor asked out of formality

She know very well that very few girls are there who love and accept a rape child.

"Happy is a small word. I can't describe what I'm feeling right now. I am going to be a mother. Two lives are growing inside me. They will call me Mumma what more I need?" Turvi said wiping her tears

"You need to take care of her master, she is very weak to carry twins. She needs a good amount of rest and food. And no more stress or wounds." The doctor said and Aaryav nodded mutely

The doctor left them alone and once she left Aaryav came towards Turvi but she got scared and covered her stomach like she was protecting her babies.

" Please don't kill my babies. I will not do anything to make you angry please. I am begging you please don't hurt them. Don't kill them I will die if anything happens to them please." Turvi said scared of him and started to cry

She has beared many things but she can't handle it. If she loses her babies then she will die because she can't take any other blows.

Aashsank's death has already shook her badly. It has numbed her completely but the news of her pregnancy has brought her back to her senses and her emotions are working perfectly.

"Shh! Butterfly calm down." Aaryav said and Turvi didn't utter a single word.

"Do you think I'm that heartless and cruel that I will kill my own babies?" Aaryav asked and she nodded in yes

Aaryav chuckled at her and placed his hand on her stomach making her flinch.

"They are mine just like you. I won't harm them with my own hands ever." He assured her

"But to lead a happy life with our kids you have to promise me something can you do that?" he asked her

Turvi nodded her head in yes.

"Never ever try to elope from me and start loving me and only me. Love me like I'm the only man in your life whom you can love." Aaryav said and Turvi looked at him

Can she love him? After what ever he has done with her? She won't try to escape ever because when ever she did that she found herself in deep shit

But about love she doesn't know but still she decided to promise him for her children sake.

She can't be selfish and get her babies killed.

"I promise I won't try to escape ever again and love you only." Turvi said and Aaryav smiled at her and pat her head like a child

After that day Aaryav gave his best in taking care of Turvi. Bearing her tantrums to her mood swings.

He is coping up with everything without getting angry at her or getting frustrated.

His present behaviour was nowhere near his past behaviour.

And slowly Turvi also started to love him but it wasn't love but Stockholm syndrome.

She could not help but feel attracted towards him. Her pregnancy hormones and her mental state none of it is helping her situation.

Aaryav can see the changes in her and is happy that she is becoming what he wanted her to be from start only

It's been two months since they got to know about her being pregnant with the twins.

Her bump is now a lot bigger than a 5 month bump should as she is pregnant with twins.

With her bump her body also has changed She isn't the same lean girl anymore.

"Aaryav I want ice cream." Turvi whined like a kid

"It's late at night you're not getting any. You will fall sick." Aaryav denied her request immediately

"But babies want it," She said, trying to make him agree if not like this then using her babies names.

"Ask them to sleep, they will get it tomorrow morning." Aaryav said dismissing her

Turvi pout but winced as she felt little pain in her lower abdomen

"What happened?" Aaryav asked her tensed

He doesn't want her to be in pain.

"Nothing, just a little pain in the lower part, it's normal," I asked the doctor.She said smiling and rubbed the place to ease her pain

Lately she is feeling this kind of cramps a lot but as the doctor said it's normal so she didn't bother much.

"You should sleep now." Aaryav said and help her to fall asleep by caressing her hairs and bump

# Chapter 71 lost

Turvi's pov

Life is so unpredictable that we understand when we see it on our own. We never know what will happen next.

My life is nothing less than a roller coaster ride.

Twists and turns are too much to be in someone's life.

Loved someone but got married to someone else. Thought someone as my mother but in reality someone else is my mother. Dream something about my future but something totally unexpected happens.

In short whatever I planned never happened in my life.

When he raped me in front of Aashank I just wanted to die. I didn't want to live anymore after I saw him dying in front of me.

He killed him in front of me and didn't even blink for once.

His hands didn't shake for once when he killed his brother. Yes step brother but still he was his brother.

I just shut myself down because I couldn't take risk of suicide because there was no guarantee that I will not survive it and if I survived he would have tortured me in the worst possible way. He has already done a lot to me. I could not bear it any more. He made legs useless for me. What would have he done? Cut my hands? And can I bear more? No I can't.

I became what he wanted me to be an obedient slave slash dog because wife's aren't meant to be treated like this.

He surprisingly didn't hurt me again or raped me; he didn't even kiss me. Why was he doing that I don't know?

For 3 months I just kept myself locked like that but when the news of my pregnancy got revealed I felt like all the walls I made around my heart had crumbled down.

My emotions came out and I got a reason to live.

My babies. When I saw them for the first time I fell in love with them though they are just tiny fetuses.

But the fear again came back when I remembered what he told me before that he won't share me with his children as well.

I begged him to not kill my babies and he assured me that he won't do anything that would harm our babies.

After that day he is treating me like some queen. Bearing my all tantrums and fulfilling my every wish. He even loves the kids.

Aaryav has asked me to call him by his name and I was really shocked knowing it.

But I listened to him and started to call him by his name.

But with everything I'm feeling something weird for him. I am liking him or maybe loving him. I don't know how but it's happening to me.

Am I sane? I guess no, otherwise who will love her tormentor in their sane mind?

But after whatever happens with me, if I become insane then I won't be shocked not at all.

He has fucked me up bad that I can't do anything about it.

My brain or heart doesn't work on my will anymore.

It only dances in his tune.

Am I not cheating Aashank by loving his brother?

But does it matter when the person is dead? Is it still called cheating?

I don't know what I'm thinking or why. I should not think about these things and only focus on my babies and baby daddy.

I need to be good to live a peaceful life with my family.

Looks like I'm really insane.

"Butterfly, why haven't you eaten your breakfast yet? You know right that you are pregnant with twins? You need to eat on time and then medicines." Aaryav said and I turn around him

"I'm not feeling like eating." I told him and that's the truth

I'm feeling weird and a little pain in my lower abdomen.

"Why? What happened? Are you fine?" he asked me

"I don't know I'm feeling pain." I told him and caressed my tummy

Whenever I do it I feel the pain subside but today it's not happening I'm just in my 5th month.

So early delivery is not possible.

"You sit down first and drink some water." He said and made me sit

"Should I call doctor?" he asked and I shook my head

I'm fine, it's normal.

"No it's ok." I told him but felt a strong cramp

"Ahh!" I whimper in pain

"Aaryav it's paining a lot suddenly I don't know why." I told him and felt something coming out from my lady part

It's wet and sticky..

I touched it to check and gasped as its blood.

"Call the doctor, I'm bleeding." I told him and find him calling someone

Soon enough a doctor came into our room and checked me.

My pain and bleeding both have increased. My clothes are ruined so this is the place where I was sitting.

"We need to take her to the medical room. She is losing the babies ." I heard the doctor tell him

No my babies. I can't lose them.

"Save my babies please," I said in a weak voice

"we will try to mistress." she said and they took me inside

The room is big and has everything that is needed in a hospital. It's a mini hospital you can say.

My body is covered in sweat as I scream in pain.

The pain is unbearable now. I can't bear it anymore.

Soon I felt a prick in my hand and blackness surrounded me.

Beep! Beep! Beep!

I wake up listening to this irritating voice.

Are my babies safe?

I tried to move my hand and touch my bump but there was nothing. It's flat.

All sort of negative thoughts are running in my head

No these can't happen I can't lose them no I can't.

"Butterfly," I heard him calling my name

"Babies!" I only uttered but he shook his head in no

"We lost the babies. You miscarried them and you can't conceive ever again. Your Uterus was infected and they had to operate it otherwise you would have died. And I can't let you die." He said and tears flew from my eyes freely

My babies also hate me. They also left me with these thoughts again. Darkness surrounded me.

# Chapter 72 blame game

Turvi's pov

I opened my eyes and closed them again. The light is irritating my eyes.

I again open my eyes slowly trying to adjust with the bright light.

I am in my room and few machines are attached to my body.

I don't remember completely what happened last time but I only remember that I had pain in my lower abdomen and I was bleeding.

Bleeding? My babies?

I looked at my stomach and found it flat. No no it can't happen..

"Aaryav! Aaryav where are you?" I screamed and started to cry

My babies! I can't live without them…

"Butterfly you're awake." Aaryav said coming from outside

"My babies what happened to them? Why is my bump not present? Why is it flat? Tell me." I asked him or better demanded from him

"Calm down Butterfly, this much stress isn't good for you." He said

"Answer my questions Aaryav I won't calm down until I know that my babies are safe." I told him

"You need to sleep again." He said and I shook my head

I tried to get up but couldn't as I felt pain on my lower body.

"What the fuck do you think you are doing huh? Don't try my patience level butterfly." He said

"I'm begging you please tell me. What happened? Please!" I said joining my hands in front of him

"Butterfly I will tell you everything but calm down first and let the doctor check you ok?" he told me and I nodded because that's the last option I have

He won't tell me anything before I do what he says.

The doctor came to check me.

"She is a fine master but extra stress can harm her." The doctor said

Why she isn't saying anything about my babies?

"Doctor how are my babies doing? You didn't say anything to me about them or ask about them. They are fine right?" I asked her but she looked somewhere else

"Doctor I'm asking you something. Please answer me. " I pleaded her

Why does no one say anything to me?

"Can you feel them inside your butterfly?" Aaryav asked and I shook my head

"Then doesn't it give you the answers you're asking from us? Isn't it clear that we have lost our babies and that too because of you." He said and I froze on my spot

Because of me? What did he mean because of me? And It's not true. My babies can't leave me.

They are my reason to live; they can't leave me alone like others.

" What do you mean by because of me? And my babies aren't gone you're lying. They must be delivered and somewhere else right?" I asked him but he shook his head and sat beside me

Doctor has left us alone to talk.

"Butterfly no matter how bitter the truth is but it's true that you have miscarried them and it's your fault. You ate something that you're not supposed to eat and thus this happened if you were a little careful then it would not happen and top of it they have removed your uterus as well. Because it was infected and could have led to something dangerous later on so they removed it. It's all your fault butterfly so don't scream and blame others for something that you did yourself. It's your fault that you can't become a mother and with that I can't become a father as well I won't get my heir who will rule after me. Because I will never touch someone else other than you nor I want a baby from someone that is not you. Did I scream at you or blame you for once? Did I? "he asked me but I couldn't reply anything

I killed my babies. I killed them. I can't become a mother ever again. I lost the ability of being a mother.

I am really a bad omen, nothing stays with me permanently.

My mother, my family, my sister's parents , my love and now my babies as well. I killed them. I lost them. All because of me. It's all because of me. I'm a bad omen yes I kill everyone Momma was right I am walking destruction. Wherever I will go I will cause destruction to them and destroy the lives of my loved ones.

I destroyed everything now I don't want to stay alive. Now I'm useless for Aaryav as well. Who will want a barren girl in their life?

He will kill me and discard me. But what if he just brings someone else and marries her in my presence? What will I do? I can't Even stop him.

He will be gone as well. Everyone will leave me alone. I deserve it. I deserve all of it.

"Butterfly are you listening to me?" Aaryav asked, shaking me, breaking the chain of thoughts that are roaming in my mind.

I didn't hear anything he said I was busy in

"Leave me alone, I don't want to talk with you." I told him and turn my back towards him

"I won't leave you alone ever butterfly. You have to accept the truth and move on in life. I am still here for you. I am enough for you. My love is enough for you. You don't need anyone else." Aaryav said but I looked at the baby posters that I forced him to hang in our room

I wanted to have cute babies like them. But like my other dreams this dream is also broken.

None of my dreams were fulfilled either.

" I want to take shower," I told him looking blankly

"You can't. Your stitches are still raw. If they come in contact with water then it will be dangerous." He said and I nodded mutely

"I want to get rid of this. Remove these posters and machines from here i dont want any of it here." I told him blankly

I don't want any of it here. I don't want any reminder of my loss.

"OK I will, but you won't do anything stupid butterfly because if you did then mind my words you won't like the consequences at all." He said and nodded obediently without giving a hint about what is roaming in my head.

# Chapter 73 realisation

Author's pov

1 month has passed since that tragic incident. Turvi is only crying silently, nothing else.

She isn't eating from time to time and that's bothering the maids.

Sanya has left from here as her husband needed her back. Trisha is here and so are the doctors.

They can't see Turvi like this in pain all alone. Turvi has tried to commit suicide as well but Aaryav saved her but didn't punished her as punishment can make her situation worse than it is already.

He has left for some business 15 days after that incident. This incident hasn't bothered him much. But Turvi's suicide attempt has really pissed him off so he left for long time. He is normal other than that but Turvi cares less about him at the moment.

"Mistress please eat something. Master will be angry if he found that you hadn't eaten anything since morning. It's 1 pm right now." Trisha said trying to feed her something

"I am not hungry. I don't need to eat anything anymore. I don't have anyone growing inside me whom I have to feed. Don't disturb me." Turvi said turning on her side

Her eyes have dark circles and bags under it. Her brown orbs are dull and lifeless.

Her long silky hair has turned into frizzy and a tangled mess.

She hasn't combed them for 10 days straight away neither let anyone else do it.

Her whole appearance is screaming about her misery.

" You don't have anyone to feed but yourself Turvi. You need to be fine for your own self." The doctor said coming inside

Turvi turned around and saw the doctor had a book in her hand.

She has heard her name after like ages. She almost forgot about her real name as she has become Aaryav's butterfly and other mistress.

No one has called her by her name for a long time.

"What did you call me?" Turvi asked surprised that someone broke their so called protocol

"Turvi, that's what your name is right? " the doctor asked and she nodded

"Life is a long journey dear but we only get one chance to live it and enjoy it to its fullest. Don't waste it mourning on something that you can't get back. Last time you became numb and now you became too expressive of your emotions. Try to become what you were Turvi, try to live again, see the things around you very carefully and observe them. You will get a reason to live. I have this book. It helped me a lot. Read it carefully and understand everything it will surely help you "the doctor said and gave her the book

Turvi took it and looked at it. It's a spiritual book.

Turvi thought something and nodded her head.

" Bring food for me. "Turvi said and Trisha nodded

" While reading the book keep calm my child you need it a lot in your life "the doctor said and left a confused Turvi

Turvi didn't understand why she said it. Nevertheless she got up from the bed and walked inside the washroom.

Taking a warm and long shower She changed her clothes and untangled her messy hairs.

Satisfied with her work she applied sindur (vermilion) in her hair partition and corrected her mangalsutra (nuptial chain)

Her face still has a gloomy look but still she is looking better than before.

She sat on the bed and thought about her life.

What it was and what it turned out.

She doesn't think anymore what her life would be if Aaryav was not there.  Because it's futile to think about it and.

Aaryav was in her past and that only has changed everything and she knows it.

Now she has a long path to go in life. She is only 23.

She has to live with Aaryav and be happy with whatever she is getting from him.

A bit of love and affection along with care from Aaryav is like heaven for her after the hell he has shown her.

Trisha came with a light breakfast as she needed to have her lunch a bit later.

Aaryav has made sure to watch her every movement.

He has cameras everywhere so he knows what's going on behind his back.

"Mistress, would you like to go downstairs and have your lunch? You haven't come out of this room for a long time." Trisha offered and Turvi nodded

A few tears leaked from her eyes when she saw Papaya salad. She wasn't allowed to have it in her pregnancy.

She placed her hand on her flat stomach and resisted the urge to cry again about it…

Trisha understood that and started talking with her about her likes and dislikes though she is aware of those things already but still she asked.

They both talked and Turvi finished her food.

She wanted to go out so without wasting any moment she left her room. And step outside of the mansion along with the book in her hand.

She sat on the chair and started to read the book.

She frowned at first looking at the things written there but when she read fully what was written there her tears did not stop.

But she wiped them as she knew it was all true and crying over it isn't going to help her so according to the book she decided to carry on with her life.

She decided to live it without any sadness. She has suffered enough now it's time to go back to her happy life.

She has lost a lots of time of her life by crying over things that were never about to change but not anymore.

She will accept what ever happened and what ever will happen in future.

She went back inside and returned the book to the doctor.

She spent her day out of her room only and asked Trisha to inform Aaryav that she want him to come back soon.

Without Aaryav's presence nothing will happen that she decided.

# Chapter 74 changed her

Mature content ahead

Author's pov

Aaryav has come back immediately after he was informed that Turvi has asked him to come back as soon as possible.

He was shocked but happy as well when he heard it.

Turvi is waiting for him to return so she can tell him what she wants.

"Butterfly," Aaryav called Turvi when he saw her sitting near the window staring at the sea aimlessly

Turvi turned towards him and smiled a bit. And that was a real shock for him.

After her miscarriage she has only cried nothing else. She didn't even look at him for once and isolated herself from him so this is something really new for him and unexpected as well.

"So finally you got time to be back for your wife?" Turvi asked him her words laced with sarcasm just like earlier time

"It's not that butterfly. I just wanted to give you time to adjust with everything. I didn't want to overwhelm you more than you already were." Aaryav said and made Turvi stand up..

"Yeah sure you did. You didn't bother to check how I'm coping after losing my babies and you said you didn't want to overwhelm me." Turvi said and Aaryav find it a taunt

He isn't understanding what happened to her suddenly?

Why is she behaving like this?

He thought that maybe the fear in her has vanished and she needs to be reminded of her place and the rules once again.

But for now it's time to get some love from his wife. He misses her very much these days.

He captured her lips in a passionate kiss and surprisingly Turvi kissed him back with the same passion…

They both broke the kiss when they became breathless.

"I want you butterfly right now." Aaryav said roaming his hands on her butt

"Then take me I'm your wife after all." Turvi said and Aaryav scooped her in bridal style and walked towards the bed

He dropped her on the bed making her bounce a little.

"You can't take my vagina you have to do anal I'm still not cured yet." Turvi reminded him

"I know and I intend to fuck that tight ass hole of yours only." Aaryav said and removed his clothes hurriedly

He then removed Turvi's clothes and made her naked as well.

He eyed her big breasts' effects of her pregnancy. He wondered if she was still lactating or not? He loved how her nipples filled his mouth with her milk when he used to suck them.

He squeezed her right breast harshly earning a moan from her mixed with pain and pleasure.

He pinched her nipple trying to bring milk out like earlier times but it didn't happen.

"If you're trying to bring milk out then don't. I am not lactating anymore." Saying Turvi looked at his eyes

Her voice sounds heavier than normal.

Aaryav only nodded and took the aroused bud inside his mouth and gave it a gentle suck making her moan and grip on his hair tightly.

He sucked and played with her twins, loving the fullness of them. She had big breasts earlier and her pregnancy has made them bigger much to his happiness. He doesn't want to lose the fluffy twins.

"Ahh!" a scream slash moan came out of her mouth when Aaryav bite on her neck hardly

"Please be gentle." Turvi said

"Can't help butterfly gentleness isn't my cup of tea you see." He said and licked the area he bit

He peppered open mouth kisses on her cleavage and then stomach but for a moment he felt like something was missing…

Her baby bump was missing he used too leave kisses on her bump every night no matter if they had sex or not…

He shook off his thoughts and asked her to turn around on four.

She obliged him and he wore a condom out of habit before thrusting himself inside her but stopped hearing her voice…

"I don't have a Uterus anymore to carry a baby Aaryav and for now you're fucking me anal so condom not needed. We both were virgin before, not sexualy active so no chances of having any disease as well."

"Hmm," Aaryav only hummed and slammed himself inside her butt hole in one time making her scream in pain as he didn't use any lubrication and started to fuck her hard and rough

Turvi bite her lips to stop herself from screaming hard.

But she could not hold her tears anymore. The pain is too much no matter how many times you did it but without lubrication it hurts very much.

She knows he is punishing her for talking too much. He is reminding her how to behave and her place.

He was indeed punishing her through this. When he was done he left her there on the bed alone like some whore whom he just used for his release.

Turvi wiped her tears and touched her lips that has blood because she has bit them hard enough to bring blood out

She smiled ironically at her blood.

She got up from the bed and winced in pain.

Once Aaryav came out of the washroom she entered and cleaned herself taking a long shower.

She came out dressed Plain Dark green quarter sleeves frock suit

"I guess you have an idea what happened back right?" Aaryav asked her and she nodded

"You punished me for crossing my limits for talking like that. You reminded me of my place that I hold." Turvi said smiling

The fact she is still smiling isn't settling well with him.

"Have you lost your brain or what?" Aaryav asked and Turvi laughed hard

"I have lost everything . I won't be shocked to know if I lose my brain as well." Turvi said with seriousness

"Anyways I have something to talk about and it's important." Turvi said

"I'm all ears to listen." Aaryav replied

"After everything happened I have decided something about us and our future. One thing is to confirm that I can't leave you or escape from you. You're my destination no matter which path I

chose. I have lost everything in my life. I have nothing left to call as mine." Turvi paused looking at Aaryav then continues

" Other than you I have no one so I have decided to make you my everything. I will love you as well. I will become what you want and stay like that only. In return I just want respect, care and a little love. Can you give me that? I want to live my life in a peaceful way not like this. After my miscarriage I was totally broken but my doctor gave me a book and believe me that changed my thinking process. I was running behind what I don't have ignoring what I have. I should be happy with what I have rather than crying over what I could have. So tell me are you ready to work with me in our relationship and make it perfect? Will you be able to give me what I want? Will you make my rest of days happy and peaceful? "Turvi asked Aaryav

" I will do it. I'm ready to work in our relationship. Don't worry everything will be fine. I will give you so much love that you won't be missing anyone anymore. I'm glad that you realised everything so soon. "Aaryav said being happy that finally what he wanted is happening. It may cost him a lot but at the end of the day but it is worth it.

# Chapter 75 end or a new beginning

Author's pov

It says that time heals every wound, every scar but is it really healed or with time we just learn to live with it?

Something like that happened with Turvi and Aaryav as well.

They both left everything behind and started the journey of their life together from a new point but does it mean they forgot about the past? The answer is no. They didn't forget anything about their past but have learned how to pretend they don't remember anything.

1 year and 3 months has passed since they decided to start everything from the start.

They both have given their 100 percent in their relationship and it has worked out really well.

Turvi is the best obedient wife that Aaryav wanted and Aaryav also has become a dream man for her…

Aaryav still punishes her if she breaks any rules but those punishments aren't severe.

Rather it's pleasurable for both of them.

Aaryav has learnt the meaning of real love with Turvi. He now understands what his father felt when he loved his mother. And whatever he did with her in the name of love was highly absurd and wrong.

The need to be with her is so much stronger than before. It's like if he let her go out of his sight she would disappear.

He has developed a fear in his heart that Turvi may leave him all alone after knowing what he has done.

But he has made sure that she couldn't know anything about it.

He has removed all the proof of his wrong deeds.

He can't let her go not at any cost. He loves her madly and if she left him he would not be able to live.

Turvi has made him see the beauty of love. She has shown him how their life can turn in heaven if they want to.

But with everything the void of their child is still there.

Turvi always tells him how much good it would have if they had their twins.

What they would be doing or what the kids would be like. Her face had a longing look with a sad smile whenever she narrated those things making Aaryav's heart clench in pain.

He also thinks that not having their own babies is definitely a big loss for them. And they can't have another baby as well and that is the biggest pain.

Currently Aaryav is staring at Turvi who is sleeping soundly in his arms naked under the sheets.

He has exhausted her enough like every other night. They have came back to India but not in his mansion

Aaryav has made a wooden mansion for her in the middle of forest far away from civilization.

He still can't believe her completely that she won't try to escape him.

They had come here 1 week ago only.

He caressed her face and softly pecked her forehead. She is the best thing that happened to him. He isn't guilty for snatching her from his brother, not at all. He doesn't feel any remorse for that matter. He doesn't even regret killing him as well because after his death only Turvi came close to him no matter what the reason is.

Turvi stirred In her sleep hugged Aaryav tightly.

"Why are you even awake at this hour? Aren't you feeling tired?" Turvi asked him still her eyes closed

"I don't feel tired when my butterfly is with me in my arms safe and secure I love to watch her heavenly beauty" Aaryav said

"So cheesy coming from you Mr. Raichand. It doesn't suit you. Happy second marriage anniversary husband." Turvi said opening her eyes

"Happy second marriage anniversary Wife two years of our togetherness, "Aaryav said and captured her lips in a sweet morning kiss and that kiss ended up in hot love making.

Later they both took shower together and did some exercise in shower as well.

They both got dressed up and started their day.

All maids and guards are on leave for today as they both don't want any interruption from.

Aaryav has decided to tell Turvi about his inner feelings and confess that he loves her.

He hadn't said anything about it to her till now.

Tonight is special and he intends to make it unforgettable for both of them.

Night time came sooner than expected. Both are dressed up for the event.

Turvi is wearing an light pink chiknari work lehenga.

And Aaryav is wearing a three piece Armani suit.

The cake and other foods are cooked by Turvi. In this time span she has learnt cooking and enjoys it as well.

The decorations are also done by Turvi all alone; she didn't let him come near the decorations.

Aaryav felt really happy but there is a nagging feeling inside his heart that something is terribly wrong. But he shook his feelings aside.

"Get ready for the surprise." Turvi said and took him where she had planned everything.

"Wow you did a great job." Aaryav praised her

"Yes I had to after all today is a very special day." Turvi said smiling

"Let's cut the cake first." She added and they both cut the cake and feed each other.

"Wow the cake is really tasty." Aaryav compliment her

"Thanks now taste this kheer i have made it especially for you." Turvi said and feed him

"It's delicious just like you but why would I eat alone? You should also eat it." Saying Aaryav feed her the kheer and she ate it silently with a smile

They both danced together and stayed lost in each other's arms.

When the danced ended Aaryav hold her hands in his and said

" Butterfly I know I am not a good man neither I'm a good husband. I have nothing good in me. But maybe I did something good that I met you and made you mine. I did many wrong things, lied to you, tortured you but in all this one thing I did without my will is loving you. I never intend to love you but I did. I fell for you despite trying hard to not love you. I just want to say that I love you butterfly I love you so much

"Aaryav said and Turvi smiled at him

" You know what? I also want to confess something. I hate you Aaryav Raichand. I don't hate anything or anyone in this world that much I hate you. "Turvi said jerking her hand off from his

Aaryav was shocked it would be an understatement. He was about to say something when he started to cough and felt a burning sensation inside him.

He coughed blood and fell on his knees.

He looked at Turvi and found her in the same state as him.

"What did you think of yourself Aaryav Raichand? That you will do sins and I will forgive you? I will come running to you in your arms and live my life like nothing happened? If you think that then you're very wrong. I can't love a monster like you ever. You destroyed me. You snatched my family, my dreams, my love, my babies, my motherhood, everything from me. You are a selfish bastard who can't love anyone except his own damn self. "Turvi screamed at him and coughed more blood

" So it was all a drama? "Aaryav asked in a broken tone

Today he is feeling the pain of rejection, the pain of betrayal from your loved one.

" Obviously it was after whatever you did with me, how can I forgive you? Yes, in the middle I had lost my mind that I thought we could be something but then I got my rational mind back. I know everything you did Aaryav every single thing. Why did you kill my children huh? What enmity you had with your own fucking children? You even snatched my opportunity to become a mother as well. You deserve to taste your own medicine before you die. So I did what you deserve. I give you a taste of love, a happy life. I made you realise the value of true love, the worth of being a parent and when I know you're totally vulnerable. Finally I decided to end this game. What can be more good then dying on the day of your so called love confession and that too by the person you love? Now you feel my pain? Now you felt what we felt when you drifted us apart? When you forced me for everything and killed me slowly? Feel the pain, Aaryav feels it. "Turvi said stuttering as the poison had showed its effects and laid on the floor

Aaryav kept staring at her weak figure. She had a satisfying smile on her face. She is satisfied with whatever she did. She had no complaints about her death. She wanted to die only, she never wanted to live after everything.

He felt the pain of his brother. He realised how much they have felt pain when he did everything with them.

But he didn't understand how she knew everything about his doings.

"How did you know everything?" he asked her lowly

"Remember the book the doctor gave me? That book gave me my answers." Turvi said and remember that day

Flashback

Turvi opened the book and inside the book she found a handwritten letter she frowned at but read whatever was written there.

"Turvi don't show any kind of expression on your face that make It seem that something is wrong with this book. Be neutral. I know if Aaryav got to know about it he would kill me and my family but I can't be more selfish and see an innocent girl suffering. I am very late but it's better late than never.

You didn't had natural miscarriage Turvi Aaryav ordered Trisha to give you abortion pills. He was just waiting for the right time. And without her will trisha had to do it…

He was never happy with the pregnancy in the first place he was really angry when he got to know about it but owing to your mental state he didn't say or do anything. He promised you to not harm your babies with his hand.

When you miscarried the babies he ordered me to operate your uterus and remove it so you won't be able to conceive again ever. He is mentally sick Turvi. He wants you for himself; he doesn't want anyone to have your attention except him. That's why he did everything.

I have hid a small pouch of dangerous poison after consuming it. A person will definitely die if he didn't get an antidote in 45 minutes. I am giving it to you for your good. Take it yourself or give him that depends on you. But yes use it carefully. "

She read the letter and tears flew down from her eyes like Naigra fall.

That was the day she decided to take revenge on him for everything. If she has to die then she will die with him not alone.

She pretended to move on and did what she planned. She mixed poison in cake and kheer both so if he skipped one another will work. She knew her death is also coming as well

Flashback end

Aaryav wasn't shocked at this; he expected something like this only.

It's his karma that has hit him. After destroying someone you can't get your happiness ever after.

"I wish you burn in hell Aaryav Raichand. I hope in every life you get this painful death and burn in hell fire. It's true that to destroy someone you had to be destroyed in the process and that's what happened with me" Turvi said her last words and closed her eyes for forever

Aaryav looked at her body and saw her soul getting detached her body and smiled at Aashank whose soul has came to take her with him in heaven

Aashank commited sins but his good works were there as well and thus he got a place in heaven.

They both looked at Aaryav and gave him a pity look and vanished in thin air

Tears came out of his eyes as he also closed them for forever.

This story wasn't a romantic love story from the start to begin with.

It was a story of destruction caused by love.

Who says that love only heals?

It does destroy and kill As well.

Aashsank's love for Turvi destroyed him. Turvi's love for Aashank destroyed her and Aaryav's love for Turvi destroyed him.

Turvi and Aashank loved each other with everything they had but their love could not be successful because of Aaryav's love.

Just when the caterpillar was over

She began to fly

Living in a daze, without being in sober

She began to cry

Turning hatred into love and love into hatred

She challenged her life

So, she drown out

Even the brightest star is gone

In the hell where the devil was born

Depression made her colourblind

Bothered by the thoughts of being cheated in her mind

In a life where lust filled her soul,

When darkness ignited her like an embered coal

Is their no one to save her?

She wanted to be free, but too afraid to fly

She was becoming crazy but don't wanna die

Trapped by the devil in a beautiful surface

Where pain was lurking at her in a pitiful phrase

Riping off her clothes, he felt the warmth at his sight

So he kept experiencing the taste of salvation every night.

Is there no end of this?

Faded by the torture, she kept fighting

With the hope that her victory was still knighting

Like the truth can't be denied

She held her pride

Surrounded in a life which betrays

She was caged in a love which destroys

Few years later

On the other side in a hospital room A girl is screaming in pain as it's time to deliver her baby.

She is trying hard to push her baby.

"You can't stop being strong , push harder, we got it there." The doctor said

Outside of the ward a boy of 5 years asked his mother

"Mumma Tanisha Auntie will be fine right?"

"Mumma the baby girl will be fine na?" another 8 year old boy asked

"Yes Tanisha and baby both will be fine but who told you that it's a girl?" his mother asked

"I know it's a girl." The boy said and a loud sound of cry can be heard

The woman along with the men got alerted as they knew the baby was delivered.

Soon a nurse came out with a baby wrapped in a pink towel making it obvious that it's a girl.

"Congratulations on your wife giving birth to a girl." The nurse said and hand the baby to her father

"Yay! Mumma see I told you it's a girl." The boy said excitedly

"She is so beautiful," the baby's father said

"Yes she is." The boys mother said

The nurse took the baby making the boys whin.

"We could not see her." The boys complained

"Don't worry we will see her once she comes home. Now let's go home. Baby is here you both need to go." Their mother said and the boys nodded half heartedly

They both go back to their house and waited for the baby to come home

And their wish gets fulfilled 5 days later when the baby came to their house.

" Wow! "both boys exclaimed looking at the cute baby

" What's her name, auntie? "The 5 year old asked

" Turvi, " Tanisha replied

" But I will call her doll face she looks like a cute doll, "the 5 year old said

" OK Aashank you can call her that. "Tanisha said

" And I will call her butterfly. She is so pretty. "said the 8 year old

" OK Aaryav done. "Tanisha replied

" And she will call you both Bhaiya. "said Tarun Tanisha's husband

" Nooo! Never she won't call us brother. She is our friend. Only our. "Both brothers said making the elders laugh without knowing that history is all set to repeat herself once again but with some twists

But this time relations and situations have changed. What will be the end of this new story, the old tragic one or will something different happen?

********** The end**********